好英文精品丛书

托福阅读百句必杀

熟读作者精心挑选的100个必杀句就能得托福高分

你敢挑战吗？以句为纲，字里行间穿插讲解

读一遍画一个勾，进步看得见

卢根 甘慧琛◎编著

俞敏洪作序推荐 新东方备受推崇的托福英语阅读法

新东方二十周年功勋教师卢根倾力打造阅读高分

100个必杀句+240个典型例句+有声句子听读+定量式跟踪练习

读完此书天下再无难句!

机械工业出版社
CHINA MACHINE PRESS

卢根

长江商学院MBA，首都师范大学学士。二十岁加入新东方，新东方二十周年功勋教师，乐词App首席讲师，精雕细课App特约讲师。现任新东方前途出国咨询有限公司分公司总经理，新东方集团中级教学培训师。著有《四级词汇连句记词》《六级词汇连句记词》《考研词汇连句记词》。

新浪微博：@卢根老师

甘慧琛

管理学硕士。北京新东方学校托福、SAT资深阅读教师。哥伦比亚大学访问学者，2006年度新东方教育科技集团优秀教师，新东方集团与北京学校北美直通车标准讲义主要研发人员。

好英文精品丛书

托福阅读百句必杀

熟读作者精心挑选的100个必杀句就能得托福高分

你敢挑战吗？以句为纲，字里行间穿插讲解

读一遍画一个勾，进步看得见

卢 根 甘慧琛◎编著

机械工业出版社
CHINA MACHINE PRESS

图书在版编目（CIP）数据

托福阅读百句必杀 / 卢根，甘慧琛编著．—北京：机械工业出版社，2016.8
（好英文精品丛书）
ISBN 978-7-111-54677-1

Ⅰ．①托… Ⅱ．①卢… ②甘… Ⅲ．①TOEFL—阅读教学—自学参考资料 Ⅳ．①H319.37

中国版本图书馆CIP数据核字（2016）第196465号

机械工业出版社（北京市百万庄大街22号 邮政编码100037）
责任编辑：张　琳
版式设计：墨格文慧
责任印制：李　洋

三河市国英印务有限公司印刷

2016年8月第1版第1次印刷

184mm×245mm • 15 印张 • 404千字

标准书号：ISBN 978-7-111-54677-1

定价：39.80元

凡购本书，如有缺页、倒页、脱页，由本社发行部调换

电话服务	网络服务
服务咨询热线：010-88361066	机 工 官 网：www.cmpbook.com
读者购书热线：010-68326294	机 工 官 博：weibo.com/cmp1952
010-88379203	金　书　网：www.golden-book.com
封面无防伪标均为盗版	教育服务网：www.cmpedu.com

序

距离卢根上一本《连句记词》系列书籍又过去了半年时间，这两年里他保持着半年写一本书的频率，《托福阅读百句必杀》是他个人的第四本书。卢根在新东方十二年的教学生涯中确实悟出了一套独特且有效的词汇语法教学法，他通过面授课以及新东方背单词软件“乐词”的视频影响了大量学生，显著提高了他们的学习效率。

卢根非常看重例句教学，在《连句记词》系列书籍中，他精心选取了两三百个例句首尾相连串起所有大纲词汇，这次他又继续用例句教学思路帮助广大托福考生突破阅读。长难句可以分为“以词为纲”和“以句为纲”两类，前者指的是句子包含密集的生词。例如：

> Intelligence seeks to grasp, manipulate, re-order, and adjust, while intellect examines, ponders, wonders, theorizes, criticizes and imagines.（智力寻求的是理解、运用、整合和调节，而才学需要的是审视、思考、探究、形成理论、批判和想象。）
>
> With spontaneous irreverence, satire rearranges perspectives, scrambles familiar objects into incongruous juxtaposition and speaks in a personal idiom instead of abstract platitude.（讽刺作品用自然流露的不尊重态度重新调节了视角，将熟悉的事物置于不协调的位置上，并使用个性化语言而不是抽象的陈词滥调。）

以句为纲的例句指的是难词虽少但结构复杂冗长的句子。例如：

> Anarchism is a term describing a cluster of doctrines and attitudes whose principal uniting feature is the belief that government is both harmful and unnecessary.（无政府主义是描述一系列原则和态度的一个词，这些原则、态度的首要统一特征是相信政府既有害又不必需。）
>
> The traits that characterize him are very contradictory to the racial stereotypes that black people are aggressive and uneducated.（他身上展现出来的特质与一些种族偏见是矛盾的，这些种族偏见认为黑人不仅好斗而且受教育程度不高。）

第一种例句汇聚成了《连句记词》系列书籍，第二种例句形成了《百句必杀》系列书籍。卢根首先从各种资料尤其是北美考试阅读题中搜集长难句，然后仔细分析学生为什么看不懂难句，总结出六大难点，一共一百个必杀句。考生只需要看懂每句的详细讲解并反复精读二十遍，比如学生读不懂长状语，这一百个句子里有很多状语极长的句子供学生反复集中训练，其他的长定语和特殊语序等难点也是如此，一个月后再看真题难度的句子将会感觉很轻松，因为不会再有比这一百个句子更难的托福阅读句子了，就像反复举了更重的哑铃再举

轻哑铃就会驾轻就熟。很多学生反映，上完卢老师的阅读课后不再害怕难句，这是最好的教学效果。

卢根教学的另一个特点是特别看重理科思维，因为他是数学专业毕业的。比如《托福阅读百句必杀》开篇列出阅读“十大原则”，后面多次运用这十个原则讲解必杀句。一般老师往往在学习方法上做加法，比如背单词有多少个方法、阅读有多少种题型、解题有多少个方法等，而卢根在教学方法上做减法，强调最简单的方法才能真正被运用，方法越复杂反而越无效。如果说切土豆有八十种方法，没有人会想学，而如果有一种方法既可以切土豆还可以切洋葱、胡萝卜、苹果、西瓜等多种蔬菜或水果，肯定很多人会愿意学。所以他总结了每个英语课程的一句话版本，比如词汇课就是“单词是感觉”，语法课就是“六个格子语法理论”，听力课是“边听边复述”，阅读课就是“定位和读懂”，翻译课就是“拆分和组合”，写作课就是“范文和翻译”，完形填空课就是“文章看两遍”等等。

卢根是新东方二十周年功勋教师，最近几年他有很大转型，把更多精力投入到管理中，之前在北京学校做项目经理，现在在前途出国咨询公司做分公司总经理，我想他将来还会继续通过新东方平台影响大量学生。他的书都是对之前教学方法的总结，我写这篇序也想感谢他对新东方做出的贡献。

俞敏洪

一个教师的抉择

《六级词汇连句记词》是笔者《连句记词》系列国内考试图书最后一本，这三本书构成了一个独特的体系，很少有老师肯花如此多的精力把学习法详尽地写下来。笔者接下来还会写内容独特的托福、SAT、雅思学习书籍，原理和《连句记词》类似，内容会有大量创新。笔者写书的目的正是想把真正有效的方法介绍给读者，同时做到与市面上常见的词汇表型词汇书大不相同。

从第一本书出版到现在的一年半里，笔者对教师生涯的思考进了一步，每当遇到重要抉择，心里时常浮现美国诗人 Robert Frost 的著名诗篇 *The Road Not Taken*，结尾两句是我内心的真实写照：Two roads diverged in a wood, and I took the one less traveled by, and that has made all the difference.

教育过程还是教育结果?

人们对这个问题争辩了很久，但没有正确答案。有人说学习过程很重要，上课讲段子可以让学生提起兴趣，不然两个小时的课学生会睡着；也有人认为最终的提分极其重要，不提分的课程没有意义。

现在的消费者购买实物产品时买的都比卖的精，可是购买教育产品时就变笨了。我们上完培训课程没考好，会怨自己不努力，可是去餐厅发现饭不好吃，为什么不怨自己的舌头味蕾有问题？消费者办了健身房的年卡，如果没有产生减肥效果，会抱怨自己去得少没有毅力，但如果健身房做到以结果为导向，通过服务监督客户完成锻炼，在一个周期内根据减掉的体重来收费，肯定会有消费者为这种以结果为导向的服务买单。

未来的教育机构会更加碎片化，教育产品会更以结果为导向。尤其是看重服务和效果的一对一和小班培训课程，不以学习时长而以学习效果收费。比如一位有经验的老师在接触一个学生并做一些测试以后能大致估出考试成绩，以及通过他的学习能提到多少分，以此为标准由一到两位老师联合授课（老师不能多于三位，因为会产生职责和利益分摊）。假想一个模式，由老师和学生签分数协议，例如托福考到 70 学费 2000 元，托福 80 学费 5000 元，托福 90 学费 10000 元，达到 100 分以上每多一分多加 2000 元。这样才能大力激励老师的教研和服务，老师再也不会用课时堆积来收费，再也不会用讲段子来提高学生满意度，再也不会把简单的知识慢慢讲来增加收入，再也不会不管学生结课后的考试成绩。老师一定会根据学生的特点布置真正能提高成绩的作业并监督其完成，中间穿插讲课和模考环节，学生也会更加放心。

哄着学生的老师还是学习方法真正见效的老师?

在教《连句记词》系列书籍的时候，笔者发现真正有效的方法施行不易，反而哄着学生

嘻嘻哈哈学习的方法大有市场。

学生喜欢谐音法，觉得记得快，可是谐音的单词到底有多少？就像教粤语的老师把粤语发音和普通话发音一样的两百个汉字教完就算教完粤语？明眼人一看就知道此方法的荒谬。笔者曾经见过一本书，将几千个单词全部用画图的方式画出来，称为象形记忆，乍一看很有趣，可是买完书的学生不知道有多少人的英语水平提高了。学生还喜欢上各种各样的培训班，自己不学却盼望着找个老师把自己讲会。可是培训班讲的是考题，做题就是体检，培训课教的是体检技巧，比如腰背挺直能增加身高、少穿厚重衣服能减轻体重等等，学生在老师万般暗示答案后做对了老师筛选出来的较为容易的题，就认为是提高。学生还喜欢通过玩手机背单词游戏学习，可是学生不知道移动端市场的潜规则，学习过程需要付出努力，如果一个背单词软件需要用户付出努力，那么下载量一定小，研发团队收不回成本。于是为了留下用户，软件开发者绞尽脑汁让客户觉得好玩，而不去关注学习效果。

总而言之，现在的学生爱吃加很多味精的菜，从不去关注营养和厨师的烹饪技术，因为年轻身体好，能扛住味精的伤害。

真正见效的方法看上去会有些枯燥，需要一定的努力，但努力并不是大量的，好老师的价值体现在用一点努力换来更大的效果，也就是高效率。比如在浩如烟海的词汇表里精选出130个句子供学生反复读，不需要去“背句子”，反复读熟即可。学生读到一半，都明白了什么是真正的学习词汇和英语提高。笔者非常喜欢“看得到终点”的方法，时刻有个进度条，就能把握还有多久完成。比如《六级词汇连句记词》中的130个句子。《考研词汇连句记词》中的300个句子，读完多少就知道剩下多少，不是永无止境的任务。曾经在考研班上有学生觉得300个句子还是多，他说：“能不能就用十个句子包含所有考研单词？”笔者无言以对，连句记词真不适合这样的学生。

商业利益还是教育理想？

承接上一个问题，这个世界上想偷懒还获得成就的人远远多于勤奋刻苦的人，所以主动迎合大部分人会有大市场。内涵浅显、特效显著的好莱坞大片肯定比思想深刻、注重人性的文艺片票房高，但并不是所有导演都去拍商业大片了。哄着学生学的老师在网络上能引起极大关注，有很大的商业价值，但对于网络教育来说，很多时候优生学好了是因为他们之前的努力，而不少差生学了也没提高。学了没效果的学生是沉默的大多数，就像观众被骗到电影院看了一部烂片，吐吐槽也就完了，没人真正去退票。不过教育和电影不同的是一部烂片顶多损失两个小时和一张电影票钱，可是不好的教育会浪费学生大量的时间并让学生更加迷惑不解，所以老师是将努力花在作秀上还是花在教学进步上，从学习效果上就可体现出来了。

然后引出下一个问题。

迎合学生还是坚持自我？

笔者理科出身，极其关注细节，经常发现很多人日常观念中有极大的逻辑错误。

“今天你碰到这么巧的一件事，赶紧去买彩票！”笔者隐隐觉得不对，我遇到这件事和买彩票之间明明是独立事件，没有任何关联，为什么要去买彩票？

“萧敬腾去哪都下雨，太神了。”笔者隐隐觉得不对，夏天开演唱会时这个地区前一天晚上下点雨的概率很大，而且开演唱会的城市都是大城市，局部地区有雨更加正常，以此炒

作非常容易。按照这个逻辑，笔者经常发现讲课的时候会出太阳，所以笔者的外号是“太阳神”。

“爸妈的钱以后都是你的。”笔者隐隐觉得不对，爸妈的钱明明是他们的，而我努力获得的回报才算我的啊，再说爸妈的钱给我也是以遗产的形式，我多么希望他们好好地再活五十年，不要那么快把遗产给我啊。

“吃茄子补充维生素 P，所以要多吃。”笔者隐隐觉得不对，难道维生素是一个一个补充的吗？难道补充维生素 P 的时候别的维生素就不要补充了吗？补充营养应该是随机吃各种食物，随机补充的过程，什么都吃不挑食就对了，为什么要刻意吃茄子呢？

“房价不算高，女性内衣那么一点布料就要几千块钱，折算成一平米比房价高多了。”笔者隐隐觉得不对，如果都按照面积算价格，一个 U 盘都能比房价贵。

“梦想还是要有的，万一实现了呢。”笔者隐隐觉得不对，难道梦想是万一实现的吗？这个世界万一实现的只有赌博，如果把梦想当赌博，人生岂不悲哀？

“我想找一个稳定的工作。”笔者隐隐觉得不对，为什么年纪轻轻刚毕业就想稳定？难道很多工作很“动荡”？其实仔细一想，“稳定的工作”等于“懒惰也不会被开除的工作”，很多人不愿意也不敢去承认这个潜意识。

……

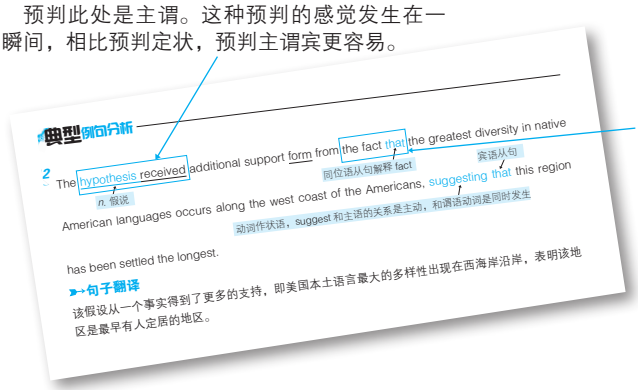
人总是在下意识里选择和自己更像的人生活，这种“像”包含了从内心到外表，从性格到行为，久而久之身边的朋友也都是具有类似价值观的人。笔者当年做学生时非常求上进，从来觉得人生的努力无止境，时刻保持一种积极的生活状态，拥有相同价值观的学生对笔者的评价会很高，反之会对笔者嗤之以鼻。但追求卓越、渴望出人头地的人毕竟是少数，中国大学生大部分是六十分万岁的心态，年纪不小了还十分依赖父母，当年是这种心态的学生成为老师以后，自然会受到大部分学生的喜爱。

以上问题都是人生的选择，以人为镜，我们更加了解自己。笔者在这十年一线教学生涯即将结束的时候对以上问题都毫不犹豫地选择后者。

2015 年 8 月 14 日

使用说明

预判此处是主谓。这种预判的感觉发生在一瞬间，相比预判定状，预判主谓宾更容易。


典型例句分析

2 The hypothesis received additional support form from the fact that the greatest diversity in native American languages occurs along the west coast of the Americans, suggesting that this region has been settled the longest.

n. 假设

同位语从句解释 fact

宾语从句

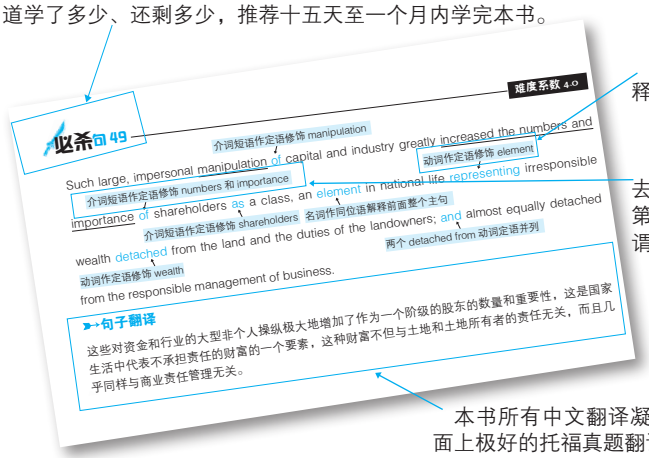
动词作状语，suggest 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是同时发生

句子翻译

该假设从一个事实得到了更多的支持，即美国本土语言最大的多样性出现在西海岸沿岸，表明该地区是最早有人定居的地区。

预判后面是同位语从句，而且从句部分完整。读懂句子内容很容易，但是下意识辨别结构却不是人人能做到的。笔者当年学英语时就吃了这个亏，只是读大意，从来不想结构，读了很多遍发现毫无用处。必须懂得结构化阅读，形成下意识分拆句子的语感，这样读更多遍数才是积累和提高。

100 个必杀句的学习过程就像软件安装进度条，读者时刻知道学了多少、还剩多少，推荐十五天至一个月内学完本书。


必杀句 49

难度系数 4.0

Such large, impersonal manipulation of capital and industry greatly increased the numbers and importance of shareholders as a class, an element in national life representing irresponsible wealth detached from the land and the duties of the landowners; and almost equally detached from the responsible management of business.

介词短语作定语修饰 manipulation

介词短语作定语修饰 numbers 和 importance

动词作定语修饰 element

介词短语作定语修饰 shareholders

名词作同位语解释前面整个主句

两个 detached from 动词定语并列

动词作定语修饰 wealth

句子翻译

这些对资金和行业的大型非个人操纵极大地增加了作为一个阶级的股东的数量和重要性，这是国家生活中代表不承担责任的财富的一个要素，这种财富不但与土地和土地所有者的责任无关，而且几乎同样与商业责任管理无关。

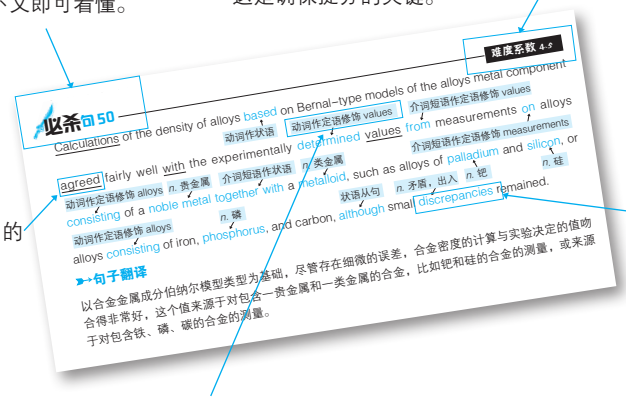
为方便读者阅读难句解析，所有解析和生词释义都安插在字里行间。

本书难句解析所用术语前后一致，曾经的“过去分词作定语”的说法既复杂且不完整（参见第二章第三节《动词作谓语谁都懂，动词作非谓语呢？》），本书统一采取“动词作定语”。

本书所有中文翻译凝结了作者很多心血，力求精准和优美，做到市面上极好的托福真题翻译。

所有必杀句都自成体系，并非断章取义的句子，无需上下文即可看懂。

所有必杀句都标有难度系数，100 个句子平均难度系数高过托福真题，所谓“汝果欲学诗，功夫在诗外”。只有读熟更难的句子才能确保高分，这是确保提分的关键。



本书下划线标出的都是句子主干

不推荐在生词旁边标注音标，单词本身就是音标，必须养成看到生词就能读出发音的能力，包括专有名词。拼写和发音完全不符的不规则单词少之又少。只有经常有意识地读生词发音才能积累不看音标就能读准的经验。

长定语是六大难点中的第二个。托福考生读不懂长难句的原因是对六大难点的某一个或几个不熟悉，请先详细阅读这六个章节的详细讲解再精读该难点对应的必杀句。分项反复读熟意味着将攻克该难点的能力达到最强，未来托福真题句子相当于六个难点随机出现，难点逐个突破后综合起来也能轻而易举读懂。

反复读难句是本书推崇方法的关键，每章之后都附带百句精练，不仅包含所有必杀句还有所有解析难点的句子。读者可以先阅读前面穿插解析的必杀句，也可以直接看此处没有任何讲解的素句子考查自己，再回去读解析和翻译。

句子越难要求读的遍数越多。

确保必杀句读懂后才能开始画第一个勾，此后每读一遍画一个勾。在此之前为了读懂句子的查生词、对照翻译、反复读句子过程不能画勾。实际操作时请顺着句子标号从上往下读，即每一遍读的是不同的句子。不要揪着一个句子反复读五六遍，这样效果不好。

目录

序
一个教师的抉择
使用说明

第一章　未雨绸缪——十五天本质提高托福阅读

要点一　强调记单词的感觉，这是记单词的唯一途径 // 002
要点二　用六个格子拆分句子，才能从“懂”到“更懂” // 002
要点三　通过精心挑选的足够难的一百个必杀句精读，“曾经沧海”之后不再害怕长难句 // 002
要点四　难句必须反复读二十遍以上才能达到英语能力提高 // 003

第二章　超逸绝尘——“六个格子”深度解析托福阅读

第一节　一小时学会“六个格子” // 006
第二节　貌合神离的补语和后置定语 // 011
第三节　动词作谓语谁都懂，动词作非谓语呢？ // 012
第四节　虚拟语气究竟怎么回事？ // 016
第五节　图穷匕见，一眼看透托福难句 // 023
第六节　百句精练 // 027

第三章　入木三分——托福阅读“十大原则”

原则一　用英语阅读，不要用中文边翻译边读 // 032
原则二　不仅要读出意思，还要读出结构 // 034
原则三　定状后置使得中国人读英语如坐针毡 // 035
原则四　前置是为了强调 // 035
原则五　并列连词不能省略而且前后并列成分通常一致 // 038
原则六　英语经常通过代词、近义词、省略避免重复 // 041
原则七　省略的最终形式是不产生歧义 // 045
原则八　困知勉行，提升阅读能力的唯一方法是反复读熟难句 // 046
原则九　端本正源，阅读能力强就是预判能力强 // 047
原则十　大道至简，做阅读考题的唯一方法是“定位”和“读懂” // 049
百句精练 // 052

第四章　洞若观火——长名词结构化繁为简

第一节　多重定语修饰名词如何破？ // 058
第二节　动词作主语如何破？ // 059
第三节　较长的同位语如何破？ // 060
第四节　较长的主语从句、宾语从句如何破？ // 065
第五节　较长的形式主语、宾语如何破？ // 067
第六节　多个名词结构并列如何破？ // 069
第七节　百句练兵突破长名词结构（必杀句 1 ～ 27）// 072
第八节　百句精练 // 086

第五章　倍道而进——长定语如何不觉得长

第一节　形容词作后置定语如何破？ // 96
第二节　定语的并联和串联如何破？ // 97
第三节　关系从句如何破？ // 99
第四节　“4W1H”引导的定语从句如何破？ // 102
第五节　关系代词前有介词的定语从句如何破？ // 104
第六节　动词作定语如何破？ // 106
第七节　百句练兵突破长定语（必杀句 28 ～ 50）// 108
第八节　百句精练 // 120

第六章　一目十行——长状语如何略读

第一节　多重状语如何破？ // 128
第二节　so…that… 句型如何破？ // 129
第三节　动词作状语如何破？ // 131
第四节　百句练兵突破长状语（必杀句 51 ～ 65）// 135
第五节　百句精练 // 143

第七章　心无旁骛——如何不被插入语打扰

第一节　插入语前置如何破？ // 149
第二节　使逻辑更加完备的插入语如何破？ // 151
第三节　百句练兵突破长插入语（必杀句 66 ～ 77）// 153
第四节　百句精练 // 159

第八章　返璞归真——特殊语序如何还原

第一节　部分倒装如何破？ // 164

第二节　完全倒装如何破？ // 165
第三节　宾语后置现象如何破？ // 173
第四节　百句练兵突破特殊语序（必杀句 78 ～ 92）// 177
第五节　百句精练 // 186

第九章　火眼金睛—— 如何不被特殊表达迷惑

第一节　特殊表达如何破？ // 194
第二节　百句练兵突破特殊表达（必杀句 93 ～ 100）// 201
第三节　百句精练 // 207

第十章　练兵秣马—— 深度解析托福阅读

长难句学习成果验收 // 214
做题时的“两个自我”// 216
做题就是猜出题者怎么想 // 216
阅读例题一 // 216
阅读例题二 // 217
阅读例题三 // 217
阅读例题四 // 218
阅读例题五 // 218
阅读例题六 // 219
阅读例题七 // 219
阅读例题八 // 220
阅读例题九 // 221
阅读例题十 // 221
段落精练 // 222

跋—— 什么是好的教育

第一章

未雨绸缪——十五天本质提高托福阅读

有学生短期内多次报名托福考试，寄希望总有一次运气好，考个高分。他们把未来当赌博。他们一次次做相同的事却期待不同的结果，但事实上只有做不同的事才会有更好的结果。美国教育考试服务中心（ETS）研发托福的目的是给所有想在美国学习的外国学生把关，提供有公信力的成绩。分数足够说明该学生具备适应英语国家学习生活的能力，分数不够即使去了也适应不了，白费时间和学费，这是为学生着想而不是故意为难考生。美国大学设置托福分数门槛其实很贴心，如果某个学校说不用托福成绩即可申请，千万不要去，因为考不过托福的差生也会去。

既然托福考试以准确测出学生英语水平为目的，先提高英语能力再参加考试才是正道，水平高了托福想得低分都难。本书在能力提升方面做到了以下四点：

要点一　强调记单词的感觉，这是记单词唯一途径。

记一个词就是记住它的语感。例如 primitive（原始的），在心中应该对应“原始、落后”的这种感觉，而不是对应“原始的”三个汉字。语感可以通过多次组词来加强，比如：primitive man（原始人）、primitive technology（原始的技术）、primitive method（原始的方法）、primitive society（原始社会）、primitive surgery（简陋的外科手术）等。

记住感觉靠的是“看得多”“看得快”“重复看”。“看得多”就是每天至少看二百个词；“看得快”就是每个词反复组词三五遍，花费二十秒；“重复看”就是一个词不管看得快还是慢都是十遍才能记住，显然看得快并重复看效率更高。不要以为单词是每天二三十个这么背的，也不要背了一些词第二天就考查自己。应该每天看大量新单词和重复旧单词，如果都是新单词每天看一百个，如果复习旧单词至少看三四百。尽量少考查自己，只需要不断重复，一定遍数后不知不觉会有大量词用在听说读写中，就是记住了。与其说是背单词，不如说是看单词。

笔者已经开始个人第五本书《托福词汇连句记词》的创作，将用大约三百个句子来囊括所有托福单词，而且生词前后复现，考生只需要反复读句子就能记住所有词。

要点二　用六个格子拆分句子，从“懂”到“更懂”。

“读懂”是读出句子大意；“更懂”是能下意识地分拆六个格子（参见第二章《超逸绝尘——“六个格子”深度解析托福阅读》），快速略过不重要的部分，重点关注主干，读出结构。同时朗读时会在合适的地方停顿，读出节奏。换个角度描述就是预判能力强（参见第三章原则九《端本正源，阅读能力强就是预判能力强》），做阅读题时游刃有余而不是勉力而为。读懂谁都会，认识单词就行，而更懂是托福高分的必要条件，考生一定不要满足于读懂。

要点三　精心挑选一百个足够难的必杀句，“曾经沧海”之后不再害怕长难句。

很多考生认为准备托福用真题练习就够了，其实不然。拿高考举例，高考英语状元之所以分数高，是因为他们早在初中就达到了高考水平，高中继续超前学，课外阅读量极大，高分十拿九稳。这个道理总结成公式就是：想得状元的分数，需要远远地超过考试的水平；想拿高分，需要较多地超过考试水平；想拿满意的分数，需要略微超过考试水平；如果等于或接近考试水平，最终分数只能是刚刚过。一个学生是优秀学生的充分必要条件是他觉得老师讲课内容简单且缓慢。

	数量	必杀句编号
难度系数 2.5	7	1，2，22，23，28，39，51
难度系数 3.0	16	14，15，21，29，33，36，37，38，42，61，68，78，79，82，85，90
难度系数 3.5	34	3，4，7，12，13，16，17，20，25，31，32，34，41，48，52，53，54，55，58，70，71，72，73，80，81，83，84，87，88，89，93，94，95，96
难度系数 4.0	17	8，18，24，30，35，40，44，46，47，49，56，57，59，66，67，69，74
难度系数 4.5	12	9，10，11，26，27，43，50，60，62，63，65，86
难度系数 5.0	14	5，6，19，45，64，75，76，77，91，92，97，98，99，100

本书一百个必杀句平均难度系数 3.8，用来讲解和印证知识点的“典型例句分析”例句难度系数普遍在 2.0 至 3.0。托福原文难度系数大多在 2.5 至 3.5，只有少量句子达到 4.0。

本书根据这个难度系数选取和讲解长难句，是因为只有适当超过难度才能获取高分。托福考生都渴望高分，即使分数已经较高，如果时间允许仍愿意继续刷分。只有平时学习较难的句子，考场上才会觉得句子容易。如果平时畏难而只读读得懂的句子，考场上便满眼生词和难句，正所谓“曾经沧海难为水，除却巫山不是云”。与之不同的是英联邦国家考雅思的申请者往往认为分数够用就行，本书适合追求雅思 6.5 分以上的学习者，如果目标只是 6 分，则不需要学习难度系数如此高的句子。

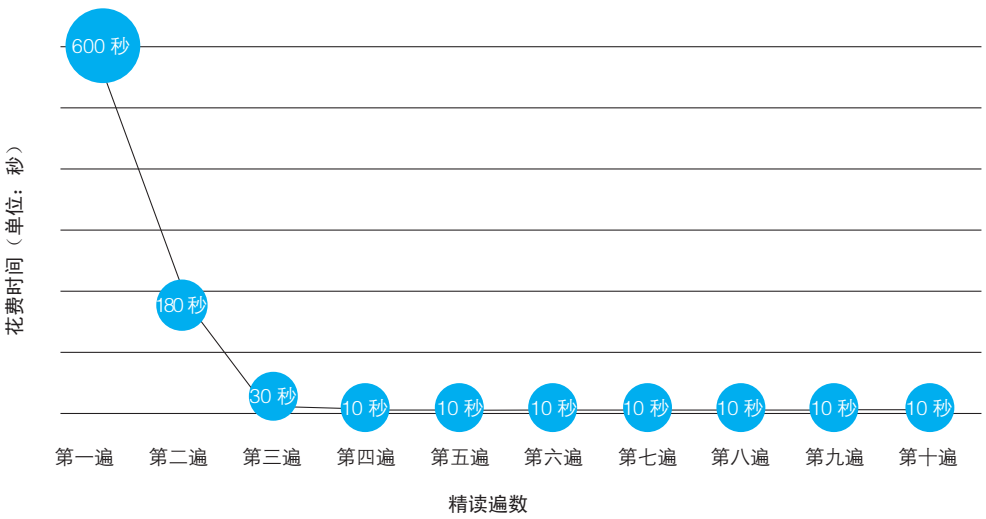
要点四　难句必须反复读二十遍以上才能达到英语能力的提高。

很多学生不仅只读读得懂的文章，而且读懂就不再读。其实读一篇能读懂的文章怎么会有所提高？很难的表达方式只读一遍下次遇到岂不是还不会？

因为边际时间递减，读二十遍并不浪费时间。笔者实测，难度系数 4.5 的句子第一遍平均耗时 10 至 12 分钟，第二遍读迅速减为 2 至 3 分钟，第三遍 20 秒，第四遍开始每遍 10 秒，综合下来 10 至 15 分钟可以充分学会一个句子，越往后越快。

实际操作时不是揪着一个句子来回读二十遍，而是多个句子一起读，每个句子都增加一遍，过几个小时再读一遍。一天内重复遍数不要超过五遍，旧句子短时间内读得太密效果反而不好，最好等一两天有些遗忘时再继续重复，期间可以读新句子。

阅读、朗读、听录音都算重复一遍，用反复听代替反复读是一种省劲的办法，但不能无意识地听，不仅要听懂，还要尽量模仿原音。不要满足于听懂托福听力或美剧，因为口语语言毕竟简单，这一百个必杀句都是较难的书面语，反复听提高效果更好。一百个必杀句读二十遍功行圆满，学习者不可能再害怕长难句，也就是“用力读”变成了一种习惯。笔者推荐学习本书期间不要做托福真题，读完后再做题，体会轻松读懂真题的那份欣喜若狂。



十五天学习计划

天数	耗时	任务	描述	完成情况
第一天	1 小时	阅读第二章《超逸绝尘——“六个格子”深度解析托福阅读》	此章是对传统语法知识的重新梳理，确保完全看懂需要读两到三遍。	
第二天	2 小时	复习第二章；阅读第三章《入木三分——托福阅读“十大原则”》；熟读第二、三章例句	此章介绍十个阅读原则，后面几章会经常引述。	
第三天	2 小时	复习第三章，通过精读文章达到下意识分拆句子的境界	下意识分拆句子指的是阅读英语时完全没有“定语从句”等概念，也不会停下来想句子结构，仅通过下意识就知道主语核心词后很长的内容是修饰，略读修饰语时有“等着它结束”的语感，从而迅速找到相隔遥远的谓语动词，这是阅读能力强的体现。考生自行选取精读文章，比如考试真题、英语教材、新概念第四册文章等，先读懂，然后边看边听，最后不看文本直接听，三五篇文章足够让所有六个格子多次出现。然后找语言更难、语速更快的阅读听力文章继续学习。个中语感只能读者自己体会，就像游泳教练能给学员示范正确的划水动作，但如何划水更高效必须由学员自己感觉。	
第四天	2 小时			
第五天	2 小时	熟读第四章《洞若观火——长名词结构化繁为简》	接下来六章分别讲解六大难点，精选一百个必杀句并以最大强度反复练习，重点是读满二十遍，读恶心后再看任何托福真题的句子都会觉得简单。 阅读长名词结构难点讲解。必杀句 1 开始是本书的核心内容，有学生反馈学到第四十个句子就明显感觉真题读起来轻松，坚持读满一百个阅读高分唾手可得。这一百个句子经过笔者的精挑细选，学习者能时刻知道学了多少还剩多少，这种像装软件进度条式的学习方法受到学习者的欢迎。 必杀句 1 至 27 重复至五遍左右。	
第六天	2 小时			
第七天	2 小时	熟读第五章《倍道而进——长定语如何不觉得长》	阅读长定语难点讲解。达到以后遇到不管多长的定语都能轻松读懂的境界。 必杀句 1 至 27 重复至十遍左右；必杀句 28 至 50 重复至五遍左右。	
第八天	2 小时			
第九天	2 小时	熟读第六章《一目十行——长状语如何略读》	阅读长状语难点讲解，尤其是动词作状语。 必杀句 1 至 27 读满二十遍；必杀句 28 至 50 重复至十遍左右；必杀句 51 至 65 重复至五遍左右。	
第十天	2 小时			
第十一天	2 小时	熟读第七章《心无旁骛——如何不被插入语打扰》	阅读长插入语难点讲解。以后遇到任何插入语都不会被打扰，不管插入语多长都能连接到最开始的部分并读懂。 必杀句 28 至 50 读满二十遍；必杀句 51 至 65 重复至十遍左右；必杀句 66 至 77 重复至五遍左右。	
第十二天	2 小时			
第十三天	2 小时	熟读第八章《返璞归真——特殊语序如何还原》	阅读特殊语序难点讲解，尤其是宾语后置现象。 必杀句 51 至 65 读满二十遍；必杀句 66 至 77 重复至十遍左右；必杀句 78 至 92 重复至五遍左右。	
第十四天	2 小时			
第十五天	3 小时	熟读第九章《火眼金睛——如何不被特殊表达迷惑》和第十章《练兵秣马——深度解析托福阅读》	阅读特殊表达典型例句。 必杀句 66 至 92 读满二十遍；必杀句 93 至 100 重复至五遍左右。最后四个最难句需要着重分析。 第十章总结六大难点并对托福阅读考题进行深度分析，读完即可用真题小试牛刀。	

第二章

超逸绝尘——“六个格子”深度解析托福阅读

第一节　一小时学会“六个格子”

大有来头

“六个格子”理论源自美国麻省理工学院语言学家诺姆·乔姆斯基（Noam Chomsky）的《句法结构》（*Syntactic Structures*）一书，乔姆斯基建立的转换生成语法理论（Transformational-generative grammar）对笔者影响深远。

此章用较短的篇幅重新梳理了语法体系，避免了小知识点的长篇大论，名为学习语法，实为阅读和写作做准备。学生能在一小时内更快、更好、更准地理清语法头绪，打好深度阅读的基础。

当年走的弯路

传统语法体系的问题是承袭落伍的高考语法单选分类。书的目录通常是：时态语态、情态动词、定语从句、名词从句、状语从句、虚拟语气、非谓语动词、特殊句型等，这种分类是为了做题而不是为了形成语感而存在。大量学生到了大学还说不清什么是定语从句，写英语文章满是小错，没有一句话正确。学得好的大学生因为薪酬低又不愿回到公立学校做英语老师，最终导致恶性循环。

传统教学体系下学生无法形成语感，学生学的是用中文写成的多如牛毛的英语“定理”，记的是大量独立的知识点，剪不断，理还乱。

英语书：“no matter when 只能引导让步状语从句，而 whenever 既可以引导让步状语从句也可以引导名词从句。”

物理书：“机械能守恒定律，只能用在只有重力做功的情况下，而动能定理既可以用在只有重力做功的情况下也可以用在其他任何力做功的情况下。”

太多学生的语法一团乱麻，经常把 The news that we heard on the radio was not true 说成主语从句；太多学生用中文边翻译边阅读；太多学生不知道单词本身就是音标；太多学生不会根据音节拼写单词而是机械地反复抄写；太多学生把“他更有可能发胖”翻译成“He possibility fat”，还认为“应该”是对的……

他山之石

笔者在《连句记词》系列书籍里倡导用句子记单词，学习语法的最小单位也是句子。试比较以上相同知识点的例句教学：

1. I will give the ticket to whoever wants it.
2. Whoever commits the crime shall be sentenced to ten years in prison.
3. I will find the person who did this, whoever he is.

句 1 和句 2 都是名词从句，即 whoever 引导的从句分别充当介词 to 后的名词结构（句 1）和谓语 shall be sentenced 的主语（句 2），它们只能由 whoever 引导，不能由 no matter who 引导，因为名词从句相当于“一个名词”即 whoever，而 no matter who 是“三个词”，不是“一个名词”，倘若将

no matter who 带进句 1 和句 2 也容易引起歧义。而第三个句子是状语从句，引导一个句子，不管是用 no matter who 还是 whoever 读起来都很合适。如果鼓励学生反复用语感读熟后记住知识点，效果显而易见。曾经有老师忽略语感教学，百分之二十的优生用语感能做对题，其余的学生没有语感，所以老师为了维持升学率，会说不要靠语感而要靠语法原则做题，这是江心补漏之举，学生错失了之前几年可以形成语感的宝贵时光。

起手式

六个格子语法理论是用主语、谓语、宾语、定语、状语、补语六大成分划分英语句子，继而归类所有英语语法。更进一步，世界上所有语言都由这六大成分构成，可以想象用六种颜色就足够给所有语言涂满色。语言之间相同点是六大成分，不同点是语序，即六种颜色排序不同。

接下来解释六个格子之外叫“语”的东西。比如同位语、插入语、表语等都不算格子。同位语就是句子包含两个主语或两个宾语，用两个的目的是第二个名词结构是对前面名词结构的解释。同位语的英文解释是：A construction in which a noun or noun phrase is placed with another as an explanatory equivalent, both having the same syntactic relation to the other elements in the sentence.（一个名词或一个名词词组作为解释性成分与另一个名词或名词词组放在一起，这两个成分与句子中的其他成分有相同的关系）。中文例子“我，一个大学不是英语专业的学生，现在成了英语老师。”这是两个句子并在一起即“我现在成了英语老师”和“一个大学不是英语专业的学生现在成了英语老师”，所以同位语就是两个主语或宾语，而插入语就是小括号，即独立的插入成分（英语中插入语和小括号都叫 parenthesis）。插入语可以表示同位语解释关系（We, the people of the United States, establish this constitution.）、状语状态关系（When he got there, he found, however, that the weather was too bad.）、定语限定关系（Thomas Edison, who was born in 1847, invented the light bulb.）等等。表语就是补语，表语只是中文语法里的概念，国际上都称为补语。She is beautiful 曾经叫“主系表”结构，其实是“主谓补”结构，is 是谓语动词，beautiful 是主语补语，后文会讲解补语是不可缺少的主干。这种解释的好处是能够扩展到别的结构里，比如 He is on the bus 是主谓补，I think she beautiful 是主谓宾补，I give you a book 也是主谓宾补。

什么是主语

主语就是“动作发出者”，作主语必须是名词词性的结构。例如：

1. The dog ran away.（名词作主语）
2. He is a lawyer.（代词作主语）
3. What we need is more time.（句子作主语）
4. It is a pity that he didn't come.（句子作主语）
5. The good in him overweighs the bad.（形容词作主语）
6. Seeing is believing.（动词作主语）
7. To possess is to be possessed.（动词作主语）
8. It is difficult to ski.（动词作主语）

句 1、2 很简单。句 3、4 通常叫“主语从句”，笔者为了更好理解称为“句子作主语”。句 4 的 it 是形式主语，真正的主语是 that he didn't come，往后放是为了提前和强调谓语部分。句 5 是形容词前加 the 表示“一类事物或人”，称为“形容词的名词化”。句 6、7、8 都是动词作主语。需要把动词名

词化，有将其变为动名词（doing）和变为不定式（to do）两种方法。千万不要认为句 8 是代词作主语，与句 4 相似，it 只是逻辑主语，真正的主语是动词不定式 to ski。

什么是宾语

宾语就是“动作接受者”，和主语一样都必须是名词结构，以上作主语的内容都可以作宾语，同理也能作同位语。

什么是谓语

作谓语的只能是动词。所有谓语动词时态变化如下：

时 / 体	现在	过去	将来	过去将来
一般	一般现在时	一般过去时	一般将来时	一般过去将来时
进行	现在进行时	过去进行时	将来进行时	过去将来进行时
完成	现在完成时	过去完成时	将来完成时	过去将来完成时
完成进行	现在完成进行时	过去完成进行时	将来完成进行时	过去将来完成进行时

谓语动词的“时”指动作发生的时间，包括现在、过去、将来、过去将来四个时间；“体”指的是动作和时间的关系，比如在以上四个时间动作都有可能正在进行，称为进行体，一共有一般、进行、完成、完成进行四个体。这 16 种都是主动语态，同时每一种都对应被动语态，所以谓语动词所有可能的变化有 32 种，可以想象成一个立方体，三条边长度是四、四、二。读者不需要知道所有 32 种变化，但必须知道原理：即动词作谓语时有 32 种可能的形式，比如 I love you，I loved you，I will love you，I have loved you，I had loved you，I have been loving you，I would have loved you 等等都是谓语动词在不断变化。这个特点下的中英文的差异就是中文说“我已经去过那儿”“我将要去那儿”“我本会去那儿”，都是在“去”字旁边加副词表示时间不同，而英语对应的“I have been there”，“I will be there”，“I would be there”动词 be 变成了 have been，will be，would be 三种形式，没有任何暗示时间的词，相当于把时间“综合”到了动词里面，所以英语是具有综合性特点的语言（analytic language）而中文是分析性语言（synthetic language）。学习英语最重要的就是体会这种靠动词本身变形带给我们的时和体的感觉，而不是靠动词旁边加副词。

什么是定语和状语

定、状、补三个格子较难。定语表示限定，用来修饰名词。比如 She is a beautiful girl 中 beautiful 就是限定“女孩”是“漂亮的”，再比如“剪纸最常用的颜色是红色”里“的”字前面都是定语，整句主干是“颜色是红色”。

状语表示状态，用来修饰名词之外的词。比如 She failed the examination unfortunately 表示在“不幸的状态”之下她考试没过，I ate my breakfast today 表示在“今天的状态”下我吃了早饭。正因为状语表状态，所以给人“悬空”的感觉，可以出现在句首、句中和句末。中文状语也随处可见，比如“在中国，烹饪是一门艺术”和“走在大街上，我们随处可以见到匆忙的人”，逗号前都是状语。笔者反对

曾经的地点状语、时间状语、原因状语、目的状语、方式状语、比较状语、条件状语、让步状语、结果状语的复杂分类方式，“状语表示状态”一句话就够了。

英语里能作定语的都能作状语，以下两组例句都一一对应。中英文相比，主谓宾补四个格子语序都一样，唯独定状语序不同，中文习惯定状前置而英语定状大多后置。

1. She is a beautiful girl.（形容词作定语）
2. He is a substitute player.（名词作定语）
3. The girl in the red hat is my sister.（介词短语作定语）
4. Only I heard about the accident yesterday.（副词作定语）
5. He is the only astronaut alive who landed on the moon.（句子作定语）
6. I know the girl studying in the library. / I have read a book written by Charles Dickens.（动词作定语）

1. He spent seven days in the snow, cold and hungry.（形容词作状语）
2. We should serve people heart and soul.（名词作状语）
3. We expect better of you in the future.（介词短语作状语）
4. She looked at him angrily.（副词作状语）
5. He saw a bird when he opened the door.（句子作状语）
6. Hearing the news, she went crazy. / Having finished all the tasks, we went out.（动词作状语）

以上两个句 6 动词为什么采取 doing、done、having done 等形式是六个格子理论的最难点，本章第三节《动词作谓语谁都懂，动词作非谓语呢？》会详细介绍。

什么是补语

补语是句子主干的补充，也就是主谓宾之外不可缺少的主干。去掉补语的句子看似主谓宾齐全，但含义不完整。比如“我认为他诚实”去掉补语“诚实”变成“我认为他”，虽然主谓宾都有却并不完整。“我给你一本书”也是一样，传统语法将其称为双宾语，其实就是名词作补语，所谓的间接宾语具有补语的一切特征，改为名词作补语就不需要引入双宾语这一没用的概念。

1. He thought here beautiful. / She is beautiful.（形容词作补语）
2. They elected him president.（名词作补语）
3. The court deprived him of his civil rights. / She is at home.（介词短语作补语）
4. You can call me what you want.（句子作补语）
5. I found the girl studying in the library. / He watched the house being demolished.（动词作补语）

补语的特点还可以描述为它既和宾语（或主语）有关，也和谓语动词密切相关，所以不可缺少。例如句 1 里 beautiful 既和 here 有关，也和 thought 有关，句 5 的 demolish 既和 house 有关，也和 watch 有关。而定状只和它限定的名词有关，和其他内容无关，所以只是修饰而不是主干。请比较定语的句 6 和补语的句 5，study 作定语只和 girl 有关，和谓语动词 know 没有任何关系，而 study 作补语既和 girl 有关也和 found 有关，我不仅发现女孩还发现她在学习，所以补语去不掉。

“六个格子”的所有成员

最后用图表的形式列出能充当该成分的所有结构。

主语	谓语	宾语
名词，代词，动词，形容词，句子	动词	名词，代词，动词，形容词，句子
定语	状语	补语
形容词，名词，动词，介词短语，副词，句子	形容词，名词，动词，介词短语，副词，句子	形容词，名词，动词，介词短语，句子

“六个格子”包罗万象

所有英语语法都包含在这六个格子里，没有任何一条在此之外，曾经的语法知识点用六个格子理论解释既简单又漂亮。

时态语态就是第二个格子里谓语的 32 种变化。如果考虑主语为第三人称单数时的谓语动词变化，则需再加上 does 和 has 的情况。情态动词也属于第二个格子，情态动词根本不是动词，它是助动词的一种，它放在谓语动词前表达动词的语气，比如强硬的语气（should 应该），委婉的语气（would 可以），礼貌的语气（could 能够），试探的语气（might 可能）以及虚拟语气等等。情态动词最好称为“语气助动词”。以 The book is interesting 和 He is interested in the book 为代表的两类形容词区别属于第六个格子，动词作补语，书是现在、主动让人感兴趣的，所以是 doing 表现在和主动，他是已经被引起兴趣的，所以 done 表被动和过去；定语从句在第四个格子里，是句子作定语的情况；状语从句在第五个格子里，即句子作状语；名词从句在第一、三、六个格子里，都是句子相当于一个名词，分为主语从句、宾语从句、补语从句三种，传统语法教材中所认为的四种名词从句（主语从句、宾语从句、表语从句、同位语从句）可以极大简化，表语从句就是补语从句，同位语从句就是用一个句子解释主语或宾语；非谓语动词属于第一、三、四、五、六这五个格子，即动词作除谓语外的五个格子，统称非谓语动词；虚拟语气要分开看，它的主句属于第二个格子，即情态动词表达动词的语气，它的从句属于第五个格子，属于时态上特殊的条件状语从句；传统语法把英语句子分为三类——简单句、复合句、并列句，该知识点用六个格子解释更漂亮，所谓简单句就是去掉修饰成分（定状）之后剩下的四个格子按顺序排列后的情况，只可能有主谓（一二）、主谓宾（一二三）、主谓宾补（一二三四）、主谓补（一二四）四种，复合句就是除了谓语以外剩下五个格子由句子来充当，自然是五种从句，最后并列句就是“双细胞”或“多细胞”结构，即两个以上具有六个格子的句子并列到一起，并列连词不能省，去掉并列句任何一个分句都会对句意造成重大影响，两个分句同等重要。

“六个格子”就是五环

总而言之，六个格子理论是一个以简驭繁的语法重新梳理。传统的讲法各个分类之间没有联系，学生找不到从句和非谓语动词的联系，虚拟语气和情态动词的联系，状语从句和独立主格的联系，所有知识点都按照考什么就教什么来分类，老师只知道总结“that 可省的三种情况”“as 引导的五种句型”等“横纵交叉总结”的知识点，把生动的语言教成数理化。

六个格子体系从分拆句子、理解句子的语感出发，一切以句子为纲，就像北京的五环定位了所有建筑物一样，一提到西三环北路，没到过北京的人也知道是西边第三个环往北，心中立刻有一个大方向。六个格子理论熟悉以后就建立了所有语法点的大方向，一看到某个结构就想到属于哪个格子，这样就建立了清晰的语法总体观。

第二节　貌合神离的补语和后置定语

补语和后置定语有很多共同点，比如都可以由动词或形容词来充当，都放在名词后等，但实际也有很大差别。必须从定义区分二者，定语是“限定名词”，只和被修饰的名词有关，和其他部分无关。补语是“不可缺少的主干”，倘若去掉，句子不完整。

一般的语法书对二者的讲解是：“如果不定式后面跟实义动词，不定式就是作定语。如果不定式后面跟的是系动词 be，就是作宾补；对于介词短语，前面有实义动词就是宾补，没有就是定语。”如此简单的点讲解如此复杂，正是中学学不好英语的原因。

请读者阅读以下例句，着重体会一类是“修饰名词，只和被修饰的名词有关”，一类是“不可去掉的主干”，必须达到下意识区分两者。

体会彩色词是不可缺少的主干的语感：

She found learning English difficult.

He proved the theory very important.

Wash your hands clean.

I saw the kite up and down.

I found him out.

I heard John singing.

I heard my name called.

Tom made the girl cry.

We consider him to be a good teacher.

I thought her to be nice and honest the first time I met her.

I'd prefer you to leave him alone.

I don't want there to be any trouble.

体会彩色词作定语修饰名词的语感：

I have something important to tell you.

Can you see anything unusual in the picture?

Please answer the question below.

The picture on the right is more beautiful.

China is a country with a long history.

She is only a girl of ten years old.

I have a lot of work to do today.

The Greens have a daughter named Kate.

第三节　动词作谓语谁都懂，动词作非谓语呢？

动词作非谓语的所有形式

	主动	被动
将来	to do	to be done
将来完成	to have done	to have been done
现在（同时）	doing	being done
完成（先后）	having done	having been done
过去		done

前四个都是 to do，中间四个都是 doing，最后一个是 done，即三大类九种形式。传统语法 doing 和 done 分别叫“现在分词”和“过去分词”，根据上表，应该叫“现在主动分词”和“过去被动分词”才更准确。当它们充当某些成分的时候笔者直接称为“动词作定语”或“动词作状语”，更精练，也更好理解。

上表的意义是动词只要不作谓语，即出现在主语、宾语、定语、状语、补语五个位置上，必须出现这九种形式之一，而动词只要作谓语，必须是 32 种形式之一，这九种和 32 种没有一个重合，比如非谓语是 to do，谓语是 do；非谓语是 doing，而谓语是 be doing；非谓语是 done，谓语是 be done；非谓语是 having done，谓语是 have done。

典型例句分析

介词短语作状语

1 He is a boy lying under the tree.

动词作定语修饰 boy，需要将动词和被修饰的名词判别两次，boy 和 lie 语态上是“主动躺”，时间上是“现在躺”，所以采取 doing 形式。同理可以分析：Climate change is an important problem requiring our utmost attention. / He is a researcher specializing in psychology.

句子翻译

他是一个躺在树下的男孩。

介词短语作状语

2 I have to return the book borrowed from the library.

动词作定语修饰 book，需要将动词和被修饰的名词判别两次，book 和 borrow 语态上是“被借”，时间上是“过去借”，所以采取 done 形式。

句子翻译

我必须把从图书馆借的书还回去。

3

There are many books to be read.

动词作定语修饰 books，books 和 read 语态上是“被读”，时间上是“将来读”，所以采取 to be done 形式。英语中 there be 句型是一种特殊句型，它本身就是完整的句子。再比如“我们当中有人撒谎”，主干是“有人”，“我们当中”是介词短语作状语，“撒谎”是动词作定语，英语翻译为：There is someone lying among us.

句子翻译

有很多要读的书。

4

To make a cake, I need eggs.

动词作状语，同样是判别两次，将动词和主语判别一次，和谓语动词判别一次，即分开两者判别。make 和 I 语态上是“主动做”，make 和 need 时间上是“先需要鸡蛋，将来做蛋糕”，所以采取 to do 形式。to do 之所以称之为“不定式”，是因为“表示将来的动作是否发生不确定”，简称“不定式”。

句子翻译

为了做蛋糕，我需要鸡蛋。

5

情态动词

动词作补语，因为 heard 既和宾语 herself 有关，也和谓语动词 make 有关，是不可缺少的主干

Helen had to shout to make herself heard above the sound of the music.

动词作状语，make 和主语是“主动让”，和谓语动词是将来发生，所以采取 to do 形式。make 本身作为及物动词，“附带”一个宾语 herself。

介词短语作状语

句子翻译

海伦必须大声喊叫才能让自己在音乐声中被听到。

6

Having arrived, I saw and conquered.

动词作状语，arrive 和主语是“主动到达”，和谓语动词是先后发生，所以采取 having done 形式。

句子翻译

我来过，我看过，我征服过。

7

Having been checked, the paper was handed in.

动词作状语，check 和主语的关系是被动，和谓语动词是先后发生，所以采取 having been done 形式。

句子翻译

被检查以后，论文被提交了。

8 Seen from a distance, the house looked deserted.

动词作状语，see 和主语的关系是被动，和谓语动词是先后发生，但要注意和句 7 的区别。句 7 强调时间先后，有明显的顺序关系，而句 8 不强调时间先后，只是逻辑上先后而已。类似例子还有：Taken according to directions, the drug has no side effect. / Offered help, one should say “Thank you”. 这两句都不强调时间先后，而 Having been told many times, he still repeated the same mistake. 很明显强调时间先后。

句子翻译

从远处看，这个房子像被遗弃的。

9 Being caught in a traffic jam, students answered their exam papers on the school bus.

动词作状语，catch 和主语的关系是被动，和谓语动词是同时发生，所以采取 being done 形式

句子翻译

被困在交通堵塞中，学生在校车上完成了考试。

介词短语作补语，很明显 leave graduating students 不完整

10 Meanwhile, tuition has soared, leaving graduating students with unprecedented loan debt.

动词作状语，leave 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是同时发生，采取 doing 形式。动词作状语后置有一种“伴随主句同时发生”的语感，通常称为“伴随状态”，所谓状态就是作状语，所谓伴随就是状语后置不重要。

句子翻译

与此同时，学费上涨，使得毕业生有了空前的贷款债务。

11 The warmer a place is, generally speaking, the more types of plants and animals it will usually support.

独立成分作状语，是动词作状语的特殊形式，类似例子还有：Judging from the response of the audience, he has made an effective speech. 在发展过程中英语的一些成分逐渐变得“独立”，更接近中文这种纯分析性语言，不再去判断什么先后发生、主动被动，不管在哪出现都是 speaking 和 judging，就像中文里“今天吃饭”“明天吃饭”“已经吃饭”“正在吃饭”“吃”不需要变。

句子翻译

总体说来，环境越温暖越能维持更多种类的动植物。

超简单的独立主格

12 Winter coming, the weather gets colder and colder.

句子翻译

冬天来了，天气变得越来越冷。

13 The rain having stopped, he went out for a walk.

句子翻译

雨停之后，他出来散步。

14 The question being settled, we wound up the meeting.

句子翻译

问题一被解决，我们就结束了会议。

coming / having stopped / being settled：独立主格现象，本质上也是动词作状语的特殊形式。句 12 里 winter 和 come 是主动，come 和 get 是同时发生，所以采取 doing 形式。同理，句 13、14 分别是“主动先后发生”和“被动同时发生”。

句 12、13、14 和句 1 至句 10 不同之处在于前后主语，句 1 至句 10 是状语的主语和主句的主语一致，句 12、13、14 是状语的主语和主句的主语不一致。比如句 12 一个是 winter，一个是 weather，为了避免歧义必须“出现两次”，句 7 前后主语都是 paper，所以只需出现一次。中文也是一样，“当我是个小孩的时候，我非常调皮。”就是前后主语一致，而“春天来了，树叶长出新芽。”就是前后主语不一致，一个是“春天”，一个是“树叶”。以上两句对应英语翻译“Being a little boy, I was very naughty.”和“Spring having come, the trees sprout new leaves.”，前者是普通的动词作状语，后者是独立主格。有学生觉得独立主格非常难，就是因为缺乏六个格子的总体观，不知道这个知识点和动词作状语的巨大联系。

动词作定、状的最简例句

动词作非谓语中最常见的是动词作定语和状语，本书没有采用传统的“现在分词”“过去分词”的概念，全部称为动词作定语或状语，更精练更完备。

下表是动词作定状的最简例句，未来所有复杂形式都可以对应到以下形式。

	主动	被动
将来	to do 作定语：I have nothing to say. to do 作状语：I need eggs to make a cake.	to be done 作定语：This is a book to be read. to be done 作状语：He was sent there to be trained.
将来完成	to have done 极少出现	to have been done 极少出现
现在（同时）	doing 作定语：He is a boy lying under the tree. doing 作状语：Hearing the news, she went crazy.	being done 作定语：The book being read is interesting. being done 作状语： Being painted, the room can't be lived in.
完成（先后）	having done 不作定语 having done 作状语： Having arrived, I saw and conquered.	having been done 不作定语 having been done 作状语： Having been checked, the paper was handed in.
过去		done 作定语：I have read a book written by Charles Dickens. done 作状语：Seen from a distance, the house looked deserted.

形成语感就像吃饭不出声

以上动词分析的目的是让读者注意非谓语动词的语感。形成语感需要“注意”和“反复”两个要素，就像一个人吃饭声音特别大，只靠重复动作肯定改正不了，因为他自己意识不到；只靠别人提醒也不管用，因为没有足够的时间训练他不出声吃饭。只有将别人提醒与不断重复相结合，花一段时间慢慢适应，不好的习惯才能改正。

看英语句子也是如此，学习者必须注意非谓语动词判别两次的语感，一次语态一次时间，熟练之后形成下意识，就能凭感觉说出、写出语法正确的句子。

第四节　虚拟语气究竟怎么回事?

传统教科书讲错了

	虚拟条件句	主句	例句
与现在事实相反的假设	If+ 主语 +did	主语 + should / would / could / might do	If I had time, I would attend the meeting.
与过去事实相反的假设	If+ 主语 +had done	主语 + should / would / could / might have done	If you had taken my advice, you would not have failed in the exams.

与将来事实相反的假设	If+ 主语 +did
	If+ 主语 +were to do
	If+ 主语 +should do
		主语 + should / would / could / might do	If you came tomorrow, we would have the meeting.
			If it were to rain tomorrow, the sports meeting would be put off.
			If he should not come tomorrow, we should put off the meeting till next Monday.

以上传统教科书对虚拟语气的解释有三处疑点：

第一，第一行说“与现在事实相反的假设”，可是右边例句“If I had time, I would attend the meeting”实际含义是“如果我当时有时间，我会参加会议的”，明明这是过去，我已经没有参加会议了。其实在哲学上不存在绝对的“现在”，现在只是一瞬间，描述瞬间就过去的时间没有任何意义。通常说的“正在进行”指的是“进行体”并非“进行时”，时间上要么过去，要么将来。

第二，第三行里“与将来事实相反的假设”，属于逻辑错误，将来发生的事是不确定的，不能是“事实”，而且任何人也不可能说出与将来发生的可能性“相反”的假设，否则就预知未来了。

第三，归类不全，还有一类表示建议、命令、要求的虚拟语气无处可放，比如 suggest/require somebody should do something（should 可以省略）。

有的老师把该用法当作独立于以上表格之外的另一类虚拟语气来讲，一种称为 if 型虚拟语气，一种称为建议型虚拟语气，其实是不知道它们本质相同。

两种虚拟语气而不是三种

两种虚拟语气即与过去事实相反的假设和与将来期待相反的假设。前者不用赘述，后者不好理解，例如：His father suggests that he should send back a note，这句话暗示父亲对将来的期待（或判断）是他儿子很可能不回信，所以才提出与将来期待相反的假设，要求他回信。同理，If Tony came tomorrow, we would have the meeting 最特殊的地方就是情态动词 would，如果这个句子改成普通条件状语从句就是 If Tony comes tomorrow, we will have the meeting。这两句话最大的不同在于前者对于将来有期待，前一句说话者确切地知道明天 Tony 不会来，自然也就不会开会，所以描述一个与将来期待相反的事情，即“Tony 明天来我们就开会”，言下之意是“Tony 不会来”；而后一句说话者对将来没有任何期待，并不知道 Tony 是否会来，所以言下之意是如果 Tony 回来就开会，不回来就不开会。再举一例，假设我是德国足球铁杆球迷，第二天有一场德国对阿根廷的关键比赛，我作为强烈支持德国队的球迷会和朋友打赌说：If Germany lost the game tomorrow, I would treat you a dinner，暗示“德国队不可能输，我也根本不可能请你吃饭”，

但如果我根本不是球迷，则对于未来没有任何期待，谁赢无所谓，我会说：If Germany loses the game tomorrow, I will treat you a dinner. 从这几个例子可以看出虚拟语气全靠情态动词“暗示”，要想学好必须对情态动词形成较强语感，这一点需要反复用英语直接体会，如果总是用中文翻译理解必然学不会。

主句八种情况，从句时态在前

这是虚拟语气的本质。任何复合句重点都是主句，所以先看主句。“主句八种情况”是指四个情态动词（should / would / could / might）搭配两个谓语动词（do / have done），按照简单的乘法原理，四乘二总共八种情况。四个情态动词表示本应该（should）、本会（would）、本能够（could）、本可能（might），两个谓语动词表示主句动作是一般体（do）和完成体（have done）。按照前文分析，既然不存在绝对的“现在”，此处可以将“现在”理解为“比较近的过去”，比如 I should be a better person 就是一般体，什么都不强调，即“在比较近的过去我本应该成为更好的人”，而 I should have been a better person 可以通俗地理解为“比较远的以前我本就应该成为更好的人”。差别挺微妙，必须用英语语感仔细体会。

虚拟语气的从句是可有可无的条件状语从句，“从句时态在前”是说从句谓语动词的时态必须在主句之前，所以虚拟语气的从句是一种时态特殊的条件状语从句。可以这样理解记忆——从句既然是假设，那就应该在主句动作之前就假设完，如果主句是 do，那么从句有 did（过去）和 had done（过去的过去）两个选择，但如果主句是 have done，从句只剩下 had done 一个选择。例如“如果我当时更加努力学习，我现在的生活就会更好”这个句子，主句写成“I would live a better life”，从句有“If I worked harder”和“If I had worked harder”两个选择，如果主句写成“I would have lived a better life”，从句只剩下“If I had worked harder”一个选择。以上两种主句的差别是完成体更加有一种悔恨的感觉。再比如“如果这个受害者被及时送到医院，他本来有机会活下来”可以翻译成“The victim might have survived if he had been taken to hospital in time.”，这时的从句只有 had done 一个选择。

综合前文，我们不难看出，学习虚拟语气的关键在于体会情态动词的微妙语感。以下例句全部来自托福听力、阅读真题，虚拟语气出现频率很高。重点在于主句情态动词的语感：

典型例句分析

15

副词作状语修饰状语从句

Indeed, stability of the biological clock's period is one of its major features, even when the

状语从句

被动语态，本意为“被服从于”，翻译成“遭遇”

organism's environment is subjected to considerable changes in factors, such as temperature,

定语从句修饰 factors

请仔细体会情态动词表示的虚拟语气，语感相当于中文的“本被期待”，言下之意是“温度并没有影响生物活动”

that would be expected to affect biological activity strongly.

句子翻译

确实，稳定性是生物钟最重要的特性之一，即使在生物所处环境的诸多要素发生了相当大的本以为会极大影响生物活动的改变时，例如温度改变。

难句解析

情态动词的认知必须在英语里反复阅读和体会，必须直接用语感体会出作者的言下之意。

16

动词作宾语

动词作状语，reason 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是同时发生

He refused to develop projection technology, reasoning that if he made and sold projectors, then exhibitors would purchase only one machine — a projector — from him instead of several.

宾语从句。that 引导的所有名词从句从句部分必须完整，因为 that 在从句中不占成分。

意为“本会购买”，实际上并没发生

句子翻译

他拒绝研究投影技术，考虑到如果研发并销售投影仪，电影放映者从他那儿就只会买一台投影仪而不是几台。

17

动词作状语，measure 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是将来发生

介词短语作定语修饰 grid

To measure them properly, monitoring equipment would have to be laid out on a grid at intervals of at most 50 kilometers, with sensors at each grid point lowered deep in the ocean and kept there for many months.

have to 是情态动词，意为“将要必须被放在”，言下之意是“检测设备根本不可能这么安放”

介词短语作状语

介词短语作定语修饰 sensors

动词作定语修饰 grid point

并列的动词作定语修饰 grid point

句子翻译

为了合适地测量它们，监测设备必须被放置在相距不超过 50 公里的网格上，而且每个网格上的传感器深入海洋深处并保持数月。

18

动词作主语

前置的定语从句修饰 to have produced themselves

Importing the grain, which would have been expensive and time-consuming for the Dutch to have produced themselves, kept the price of grain low and thus stimulated individual demand for other foodstuffs and consumer goods.

to have done 和 would have done 都是完成体，言下之意是“荷兰人曾经尝试过自己生产粮食”，如果都改为一般体 which would be expensive and time-consuming for the Dutch to produce themselves 就没有“曾经尝试过”这层意思了

形容词作补语，对应的谓语动词是 kept

连词

句子翻译

对于荷兰人来说自己生产粮食会既昂贵又耗时，所以进口粮食使得粮食的价格保持在低位，并且刺激了个人对其他食物和消费品的需求。

同位语从句解释 prospect　adj. 空前的

19 People in the United States in the nineteenth century were haunted by the prospect that unprecedented

原文翻译是意译，如果强调虚拟语气直译过来是：“19 世纪的美国人因为一个前景而变得提心吊胆，即国家经济史无前例的变化本会导致社会混乱。”言下之意是“实际上没有带来社会混乱”

change in the nation's economy would bring social chaos.

句子翻译

19 世纪的美国人本以为国家经济史无前例的变化会带来社会混乱，因而变得提心吊胆。

意为“本不会签署”，实际上南方各州在有对“特殊制度”的保护下还是签署了宪法

20 The southern state would not have signed the Constitution without protections for the "peculiar

介词短语作状语

institution", including a clause that counted a slave as three-fifths of a man for purposes of

定语从句修饰 clause

congressional representation.

句子翻译

如果没有对“特殊制度”的保护，该特殊制度其中一个条款是国会代表方面一个奴隶算五分之三个公民，南方各州不会签署宪法。

意为“本可以是但实际上不是”　n. 掠夺者　n. 表示

21 The railroad could be and was a despoiler of nature; furthermore, in its manifestation of speed and

意为“本可能是但实际上不是”　意为“实际上也是”，这两个谓语动词并列给人一种反差，就像中文里“她爱着并恨着他”。

noise, it might be a despoiler of human nature as well.

句子翻译

铁路本可以是，同时事实上也是自然的掠夺者；而且，在其速度和噪音的表现上也可能是人性的掠夺者。

vt. 吞没

22 If it were not for this faculty, they would devour all the food available in short time and would

意为“本会但实际上没有”，也就是说它们实际上具有这个能力，并没有因为挨饿而灭绝。后文 would starve 也是此意。

probably starve themselves out of existence.

句子翻译

如果不是具有这种能力，它们会在短时间内吞噬掉所有可得到的食物，而且很可能会因为挨饿而灭绝。

23

n. 授粉者

In the second case, pollinators (insects, birds) obtain food from the flowering plant, and the plant

动词作补语，对应的谓语动词是 has

v. 分散

代词指代 pollen 和 seeds

虚拟语气条件句，可以写成更精练的倒装形式 were they carried by the wind only

has its pollen distributed and seeds dispersed much more efficiently than they would be if they

v. 分散

动词作补语，对应的谓语动词是 has

省略现象，补全后是 would be distributed and dispersed，虚拟语气表示没有发生的状况

were carried by the wind only.

句子翻译

在第二个例子中，授粉者（昆虫、鸟类）从开花植物中获取食物，同时植物可以通过它们以比仅仅依靠风传播高效得多的方式来传递花粉和种子。

24

状语从句

虚拟语气条件句

The Fore also displayed familiar facial expressions when asked how they would respond if they

定语从句修饰 characters

宾语从句，how 在从句中作状语。此知识点是很多学生的盲点，详细讲解请参见第四章第四节《较长的主语、宾语从句如何破？》。

were the characters in stories that called for basic emotional responses.

句子翻译

当被问到如果他们是故事中那些需要基本情感反应的角色会如何反应时，富勒人也会呈现出类似的表情。

25

介词短语作状语

I am sure that, without modern weapons, I would make a very poor show of disputing the ownership

意为“本会”，也就是说实际上不会

用词很文艺

of a cave with a bear, and in this I do not think that I stand alone.

句子翻译

我敢肯定，如果没有现代武器，我不可能和熊争夺洞穴，而且在这一点上我不是唯一持有这个观点的人。

26

宾语从句

动词作补语，对应的谓语动词是 see

The research suggests that not all people graduating into a recession see their life chances dimmed: those

描述的是与过去事实相反的情况，过去的事实是这些毕业生已经在经济衰退时期毕业了，赚得了相关工资，而这里描述的是毕业于正常情况，即 graduated in better times 挣得的工资。

with degrees from elite universities catch up fairly quickly to where they otherwise would have been if they

强调句

had graduated in better times; it is the masses beneath them that are left behind.

句子翻译

研究表明，并不是所有经济衰退期间毕业的人都前景黯淡：那些毕业于名校的学生很快可以获得跟经济正常时毕业一样的工资待遇，大量毕业于普通学校的学生被远远地甩在后面。

n. 更新世

27 Nevertheless, researchers of the Pleistocene epoch have developed all sorts of more or less fanciful model schemes of how they would have arranged the Ice Age had they been in charge of events.

介词短语作定语修饰 schemes

言下之意是“他们根本没有安排冰河世纪的资格”

名词从句，how 在从句中作状语。how 引导名词从句和 of 一起组成介词短语修饰 schemes，类似用法后文多次出现。

倒装的虚拟语气条件句，正常语序是 if they had been in charge of events。这样写语言精练，更加强调前移的主句部分。

句子翻译

然而，更新世的研究者们建立了各种各样或多或少有些幻想的模型系统，用来显示如果由他们决定地质事件他们本会如何安排冰河时代。

v. 补偿　*n.* 不平等　宾语从句，how 在从句中作状语

28 They do not compensate for gross social inequality, and thus do not tell how able an underprivileged youngster might have been had he grown up under more favorable circumstances.

宾语从句中主句谓语动词，might 情态动词此处强调“本可能”

倒装的虚拟语气条件句，正常语序是 if he had grown up。主句和从句描述的都是没有发生的状况。

句子翻译

他们没有弥补恶劣的社会不公，因此不能说明一个物质条件差的年轻人如果在更有利的环境下成长本可能有多大才华。

难句解析

虚拟语气主句其他三个情态动词 could have been 意为“本可以”，should have been 意为“本应该”，would have been 意为“本会”。

倒装的虚拟语气条件句，正常语序是 if it had not been

n. 翼龙

29 Indeed, had it not been for the superb preservation of these fossils, pterosaurs might well have been classified as dinosaurs.

副词作状语，意为“很可能”。例如 He may well be recognized as a little girl.（他很可能被当作一个小女孩。）

句子翻译

确实，如果这些化石没有被非常好地保存下来，翼龙很可能被归类到恐龙里。

adj. 看似真实的　n. 假说

30 This might be a plausible hypothesis were it not for two factors.

倒装的虚拟语气条件句，正常语序是 if it were not for two factors

句子翻译

如果不是因为这两个因素，这可能是一个合理的假设。

介词短语作状语　宾语从句　adj. 优先的

31 In the first place any scientific study requires that there be no preferential weighting of one or

省略了情态动词 should 的 be 动词原形。以前我们学过 require sb. should do sth.，should 可省。这里宾语从句同样用 should be。

省略 that 的定语从句修饰 series

another of the items in the series it selects for its consideration.

句子翻译

首先，任何科学研究都要求人们对可供考虑的诸多因素不能厚此薄彼。

副词作定语修饰 requirement　动词作定语修饰 biomaterials

32 Even the requirement that biomaterials processed from these materials be nontoxic to host tissue

同位语从句解释 requirement

省略了情态动词 should 的 be 动词原形。requirement 的同位语从句同样用虚拟语气。

can be met by techniques derived from studying the reactions of tissue cultures to biomaterials

动词作定语修饰 techniques。它还有一个省略了的并列动词定语，补全后是 derived from studying short-term implants，省略的最终形式是不产生歧义。

or from short-term implants.

句子翻译

甚至，从这些材料中加工出来的生物材料应该对受移植者的组织无害这一需求，能够通过研究组织培养对生物材料的反应的技术以及通过研究短期移植技术来满足。

第五节 图穷匕见，一眼看透托福难句

笔者行之有效的阅读教学法要求学生首先熟悉六个格子的所有结构，然后找典型例句分析演练，刚开始反应慢一点没关系，几天以后判别会越来越快，等到不知不觉能拆分就能读得比以前更快更懂了。

笔者从《连句记词》系列书籍中精选了以下十个练习句，六个成分都有出现，讲解相对细致，难度逐步提升。如果能准确辨别，说明前面的内容学会了，如果仍不明白则需要回炉学习。欢迎读者用微博@卢根老师提问。

练习 1

难度系数 1.5

意为“方法”时单复数同形。主语部分核心词是 means，primary 形容词作定语，of 介词短语作后置定语。means 前后的定语可以理解为是附带的。

The primary means of educating the talent require obtaining and maintaining competitive advantages.

动词名词化，和 of 一起构成介词短语作定语修饰 means

动词作宾语

并列的动词宾语。这两个动词都附带名词 advantages，名词又附带形容词 competitive

句子翻译

培养天才最主要的方法是让他们获得并保持竞争优势。

练习 2

难度系数 1.5

动词作主语，email address 是附带的

介词短语作状语

Using an email address specifically for your job search eliminates the possibility that you will receive unwelcome emails in your primary mailbox.

副词作状语

介词短语作状语

同位语从句解释 possibility

句子翻译

求职时使用特定的邮箱会消除主邮箱收到垃圾邮件的可能性。

难句解析

同位语从句和定语从句长得很像，两者的共同点是都是解释说明（后文称为狗尾续貂），先行词都可以是一个词或一个句子，都经常由 that 引导。区分两者抓住一点即可，同位语从句的从句部分非常完整而定语从句的从句部分一定不完整。更进一步，所有 that 引导的名词从句（主语、宾语、补语从句），从句部分都完整。

关于定语从句从句部分一定不完整，例如：She is a girl who is beautiful 从句缺主语，The news that I heard yesterday was not true 从句缺宾语，This is the hospital where I was born 从句缺状语。在第三句中，where 在从句中作状语，而且必不可少，所谓限制性状语，也就是如果没有状语，从句将和主句没有任何关系。

练习 3

难度系数 1.5

介词短语作状语

动词作定语修饰 ability，ability 和 stay 语态上是“主动保持”，时间上是“将来保持”，所以采取 to do 形式。

What distinguishes those who land jobs from those who don't is their ability to stay motivated.

主语从句

定语从句修饰 those

定语从句修饰 those

动词作补语，此时 stay 相当于谓语动词，形成主谓补结构，类似于 He remains excited。

句子翻译

保持积极的能力把找到工作的人从找不到工作的人中区分开来。

练习 4

难度系数 2.0

定语从句修饰 time，when 在从句中作状语。此处理解至关重要，详细讲解请参见第四章第四节《较长的主语、宾语从句如何破？》

定语从句修饰 employers

At a time when hiring qualified people is becoming more difficult, employers who can eliminate invalid biases from the process have a distinct advantage.

介词短语作状语

动词作主语

介词短语作状语

形容词作补语

句子翻译

在招聘高质量的人才变得越来越难的时代，那些在招聘过程中摒弃偏见的雇主拥有明显的优势。

练习 5

难度系数 2.0

动词作定语修饰 anyone

副词作状语修饰 heard，意为“不清楚地听到的一些词”

Of course anyone receiving a telephone call can ask the caller to repeat words heard indistinctly but anyone who made a habit of asking callers to repeat many words would provoke embarrassment.

介词短语作状语

介词短语作定语修饰 habit

动词作补语，对应的谓语动词是 ask

动词作定语修饰 words

定语从句修饰 anyone

动词作补语

vt. 挑起

n. 尴尬

句子翻译

一个接电话的人当然可以让打电话的人重复一些没听清的词，但如果一个人养成接电话时总让对方重复很多词的习惯，将会引起尴尬。

练习 6

难度系数 2.5

动词作补语。同练习 3、4、5，必须体会出补语“去不掉”的语感，从句部分是主谓补结构，谓语动词是被动语态，补语是主语补足语。

Essentially, a theory is an abstract, symbolic representation of what is conceived to be reality.

副词作状语

名词从句，和 of 一起构成介词短语作定语修饰 representation

句子翻译

本质上，理论是对已认知现实的抽象的和象征性的表达。

练习 7

难度系数 3.0

形式主语，真正的主语是 to see

定语从句修饰 journalists

In fact, it is difficult to see how journalists who do not have a clear grasp of the basic features

动词作主语

宾语从句，how 在从句中作状语

of the Canadian Constitution can do a competent job on political stories.

介词短语作状语

句子翻译

事实上，很难想象那些对加拿大宪法基本特征缺乏清晰了解的记者如何能够胜任政治新闻报道工作。

练习 8

难度系数 3.5

介词短语作定语修饰 emphasis

动词作状语，combine 和主语的关系是被动，和谓语动词是过去发生（不强调先后）。还经常用 coupled with，参见必杀句 58。

The emphasis on data gathered first-hand, combined with a cross-cultural perspective brought to the

动词作定语修饰 data

动词作定语修饰 perspective

analysis of cultures past and present, makes this study a unique and distinctly important social science.

并列的形容词作后置定语修饰 cultures。英语中定语更多后置，只是中国人太习惯于 beautiful girl 这样的表达。

unique 和 important 形容词定语并列

名词作补语，对应的谓语动词是 makes

句子翻译

对第一手搜集的数据的重视，结合在对过去和现在文化的分析中所采用的跨文化视角，使得这项研究成为一个独特并且尤为重要的社会科学。

练习 9

难度系数 3.5

强调句，it is…whose 强调定语的情况很少见

It is animals and plants which lived in or near water whose remains are most likely to be preserved,

定语从句修饰 animals 和 plants　并列的强调句　动词作状语

for one of the necessary conditions of preservation is quick burial, and it is only in the seas and

连词，表原因　*n.* 淤泥　介词短语作状语，此处是被强调的对象

rivers, and sometimes lakes, where mud and silt have been continuously deposited, that bodies

定语从句修饰 seas、rivers 和 lakes，where 在从句中作状语

and the like can be rapidly covered over and preserved.

句子翻译

只有生活在水中或水边的动植物的残留最有可能被保存下来，因为保存的必要条件之一是迅速掩埋，所以只有在泥沙不断淤积的海洋、江河，还有时是湖泊，尸体之类的东西才能被迅速掩埋从而保存下来。

难句解析

强调句非常像形式主语，因为经常是 it is…that…，比较笨的辨别方法是强调句 it is 和 that 都可去掉，而形式主语只能去掉 it。根据后文第三章原则九，要尽量从左边区分两者，看到 animals 和 plants 就要确定是强调句，因为形式主语 it is 后更多是形容词词性的补语而不是名词词性的补语，仍旧要培养语感来区分二者。此句强调的内容非常多，着重体会强调句的语感，没看到 that 强调的内容就没有结束。

练习 10

难度系数 3.5

状语从句修饰 country，where 在从句中作状语

Moreover, in any country where population presses hard upon natural resources, the general

形容词作补语　动词作状语，be 动词后附带形容词作补语，此结构相当于 She is beautiful

economic situation is apt to be so precarious that government control of capital and labor,

adj. 恰当的；易于……的　*adj.* 危险的，不确定的　状语从句。详细讲解请参见第六章第二节《so…that… 句型如何破？》。

production and consumption, becomes inevitable. It is no accident that the twentieth century

形式主语，真正的主语是 that 引导的主语从句　主语从句

n. 独裁

should be the century of highly centralized governments and totalitarian dictatorships.

n. 极权主义　*adj.* 极权主义的

句子翻译

而且，在任何一个人口对自然资源造成巨大压力的国家里，总体经济情况特别不稳定，以至于政府控制资金和劳力以及控制生产和消费变得不可避免。20 世纪成为中央集权政府和极权主义独裁的世纪并不是偶然。

第六节 百句精练

典型例句

★S_1 ～ S_{14} 内容较简单，掌握后听懂录音即可，考生可根据个人情况自行练习。

S_{15} Indeed, stability of the biological clock's period is one of its major features, even when the organism's environment is subjected to considerable changes in factors, such as temperature, that would be expected to affect biological activity strongly.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{16} He refused to develop projection technology, reasoning that if he made and sold projectors, then exhibitors would purchase only one machine — a projector — from him instead of several.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{17} To measure them properly, monitoring equipment would have to be laid out on a grid at intervals of at most 50 kilometers, with sensors at each grid point lowered deep in the ocean and kept there for many months.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{18} Importing the grain, which would have been expensive and time-consuming for the Dutch to have produced themselves, kept the price of grain low and thus stimulated individual demand for other foodstuffs and consumer goods.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{19} People in the United States in the nineteenth century were haunted by the prospect that unprecedented change in the nation's economy would bring social chaos.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{20} The southern state would not have signed the Constitution without protections for the "peculiar institution," including a clause that counted a slave as three-fifths of a man for purposes of congressional representation.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{21} The railroad could be and was a despoiler of nature; furthermore, in its manifestation of speed and noise, it might be a despoiler of human nature as well.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S22 If it were not for this faculty, they would devour all the food available in short time and would probably starve themselves out of existence.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S23 In the second case, pollinators (insects, birds) obtain food from the flowering plant, and the plant has its pollen distributed and seeds dispersed much more efficiently than they would be if they were carried by the wind only.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S24 The Fore also displayed familiar facial expressions when asked how they would respond if they were the characters in stories that called for basic emotional responses.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S25 I am sure that, without modern weapons, I would make a very poor show of disputing the ownership of a cave with a bear, and in this I do not think that I stand alone.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S26 The research suggests that not all people graduating into a recession see their life chances dimmed: those with degrees from elite universities catch up fairly quickly to where they otherwise would have been if they had graduated in better times; it is the masses beneath them that are left behind.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S27 Nevertheless, researchers of the Pleistocene epoch have developed all sorts of more or less fanciful model schemes of how they would have arranged the Ice Age had they been in charge of events.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S28 They do not compensate for gross social inequality, and thus do not tell how able an underprivileged youngster might have been had he grown up under more favorable circumstances.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S29 Indeed, had it not been for the superb preservation of these fossils, pterosaurs might well have been classified as dinosaurs.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S30 This might be a plausible hypothesis were it not for two factors.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{31} In the first place any scientific study requires that there be no preferential weighting of one or another of the items in the series it selects for its consideration.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{32} Even the requirement that biomaterials processed from these materials be nontoxic to host tissue can be met by techniques derived from studying the reactions of tissue cultures to biomaterials or from short–term implants.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

练习 1–10

S_1 The primary means of educating the talent require obtaining and maintaining competitive advantages.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_2 Using an email address specifically for your job search eliminates the possibility that you will receive unwelcome emails in your primary mailbox.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_3 What distinguishes those who land jobs from those who don't is their ability to stay motivated.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_4 At a time when hiring qualified people is becoming more difficult, employers who can eliminate invalid biases from the process have a distinct advantage.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_5 Of course anyone receiving a telephone call can ask the caller to repeat words heard indistinctly but anyone who made a habit of asking callers to repeat many words would provoke embarrassment.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_6 Essentially, a theory is an abstract, symbolic representation of what is conceived to be reality.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_7 In fact, it is difficult to see how journalists who do not have a clear grasp of the basic features of the Canadian Constitution can do a competent job on political stories.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_8 The emphasis on data gathered first-hand, combined with a cross-cultural perspective brought to the analysis of cultures past and present, makes this study a unique and distinctly important social science.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_9 It is animals and plants which lived in or near water whose remains are most likely to be preserved, for one of the necessary conditions of preservation is quick burial, and it is only in the seas and rivers, and sometimes lakes, where mud and silt have been continuously deposited, that bodies and the like can be rapidly covered over and preserved.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{10} Moreover, in any country where population presses hard upon natural resources, the general economic situation is apt to be so precarious that government control of capital and labor, production and consumption, becomes inevitable. It is no accident that the twentieth century should be the century of highly centralized governments and totalitarian dictatorships.

精读遍数： ❑

第三章

入木三分——托福阅读“十大原则”

十大原则思想来源于数学公理思想，欧几里得五大几何公理能推导出欧氏几何所有定理，本章的十大原则也能解释所有托福阅读难句。因为公理不能被其他任何定理推导出来，所以公理的表述很泛，比如“过任意两点有且只能作一条直线”“直线可以向两端无限延长”等等。这十大原则也是如此。

原则一 用英语阅读，不要用中文边翻译边读

中文边翻译边读指的是学生把句子“肢解”成一个个单词，然后一个个转换成中文，最后连接起来“理解”句子，很多学生没意识到这是错的。所谓从师如医，老师要通过“望闻问切”知道学生的病灶。

有学生这么说：“听完一句正要反应出它的中文意思的时候，录音已经往后读了三句话了。”笔者问：“为什么要反应出这句话的中文意思呢？”学生诧异地问：“我不反应出中文意思怎么能读懂呢？”笔者再问：“美国人不懂中文，他们是如何听懂、读懂英语的？”学生又说：“那是因为他们是美国人啊，英语又不是我的母语。”笔者说：“英语对我来说也不是母语，但我从学英语伊始就是用英语来读的。那时我英语水平特别低，只能读懂 I am a boy，但我从来是直接理解的，养成了好习惯。”

例如：Bill has an impressive résumé and should find work easily.

学生会读成：“Bill 有一个、令人印象深刻的、简历、应该、找、工作、容易”。

再比如：Salt is a component of sea water.

学生会读成：“盐、是、成分、海、水”，思考若干秒之后重新组合为“盐是海水的成分”。

学生还会：

1. 朗读英语时不能读懂意思，只能想发音，想不过来意思，想意思就会读不准。
2. 阅读英语文章时脑子里经过的是中文含义而不是英语发音。
3. 一篇听不懂的文章却能读懂。
4. 听到句子反应不过来，要想很久到底是哪个词，不会按照音节拼写单词。
5. 排斥朗读英语，比如遇到 paradox 这个词，不去按照拼写读它的发音，而是读成“悖论”。同时还会排斥口语，即使自己一个人学习也不愿意朗读单词或句子，更不用说同外国人对话了。
6. 抄长句子，要抬头看很多次才能写下来，而不是尽可能多地读完并记住，流利地写下来。
7. 阅读里对介词、冠词、情态动词等“小词”没有任何语感，写作时经常丢掉。
8. 整个句子每个单词都“认识”却读不懂。（只认识中文对应而不是感觉，不算真正认识单词。）
9. “翻译”句子速度特别快。（这里所谓的“翻译”只是把英语单词对应成中文再按原文顺序读出来，所以很快就能“翻译”。真正的翻译是先迅速用英语直接读懂，快速思考，组织合适的语言后再重新用中文完整地说出来。）

中文阅读法的危害

曾经有学生在邮件里问：一些句子看了中文翻译后明白了句子的意思，但还是不知道整个句子该怎么去理解，比如：

1 It was 1952 and my father was away at war, leaving my mother and me behind to face hardship alone.

behind 是副词，中文意思“在后面”，可我没明白在这该怎么理解？

2 I learned a valuable lesson that year which carries on to this day.

carries on 在这是一个固定搭配吗？我怎么和中文翻译对不上？

3 People busied the streets with their arms full of packages.

busy 在这是不是忙于什么事？后面又怎么接 the streets？还有 with 后的这句，是修饰 the streets 的吗？该怎么理解？

第一个句子学生通常会“走火入魔地”读成：“是在 1952 年，我的父亲，很远在战斗，离开我妈和我，后面面对困难孤独。”这样也能大概理解，但这位学生单独把 behind 提出来就产生了疑问。只有直接用英语来读才能体会到词与词之间的联系，比如“be away at war”，“leave sb. behind”，“face sth. alone”。语感给我们“在很远很远的地方战斗”“撇下某人”“孤独面对（困难）”的意思。第二个句子关键是对 carry on 的理解，如果机械地查词典，词典的解释会让人崩溃：“开展，维持（持续），卷入，从事，坚持，举止不当”，直到套到“持续”这个意思上才勉强理解。其实 carry on 不是什么“开展，持续，卷入”，它就是“向前继续下去、持续下去”的感觉。第三个句子是很生动的使动用法，busy 的解释有：形容词“忙碌的”、形容词“占线的”、形容词“繁杂的”、及物动词“使忙于”，统一到一起就是“很忙的感觉”。

长期采用中文阅读法的第一个危害是单词很难背。例如上句 Salt is a component of sea water，用语感就能读出“是……的一个成分（部分）”，不需要将 component 精确对应到“成分”这两个字；第二个危害是一词多义现象难以解决。例如 They composed all their differences，按照以前的阅读方法，要想理解这个句子就必须一个一个地套 compose 的中文解释，“组成、构成、安排、排版、创作、调解”等等，直到套到最后一个“调解”才能理解句子。其实 compose 就是放到一起的感觉，把不同之处组成到一起就是调解，经验越多理解越快。第三个危害是小词含混不清。按照中文阅读法读句子只会注意实词而忽略了虚词的语感。比如“I'll be waiting for you”对应到“我将会等你”，其他句子里的“wait for sb.”都对应“等某人”，这将会忽略 wait for 的搭配。最后一个危害是有些句子会完全理解错，导致阅读题做不对。有学生把 if lessons are learned 读成“如果课程被学习”，而它的实际含义是“如果他受到教训”；再比如学生不理解 assume responsibility（承担责任）这样的表达，对应到“假设责任”就完全不理解。托福阅读里的句子简化题都是在容易读错的句子上出题。

阅读习惯的改正方法

不管你使用的阅读方法是否正确，以下两个方法都值得长期练习。

方法 1　边听边阅读，即一边听录音一边跟着阅读

时刻提醒自己脑海里必须是英语发音，如果遇到生词或者专有名词，也是按照规律拼读，而不是被发音卡住，熟练以后所有不认识的词都能读准。同时听录音的目的是“屏蔽”翻译的冲动，如果没有时间对应中文，就只能用英语理解了。相当于安装一个报警器，如果听录音就不能理解原文，关掉录音才能理解，说明阅读习惯错了；如果能顺利进行下来，尤其是录音语速较快也能跟上，说明阅读习惯正确；经过一段时间的训练，本来听不懂的文章能够跟上就是提高。对于较难的文章，一定先看懂再听，然后再进行边听边阅读的练习。

方法 2　边听边复述，即影子跟读训练（Shadow exercise）

就是在听句子时延迟复述听到的内容，水平越高延迟时间越长。从听熟的文章开始练习，一定要读出声，随着熟练度的提高再增加文章难度或延迟时间，继续练习一段时间后达到听到陌生文章就能直接复述。

学习提高和学习检测有本质不同，很多学生把学习检测当成学习提高。查生词、读例句、听文章、读文章、复述文章都是学习提高，需要反复进行。而随机挑选一篇文章直接复述，即使录音速度较快也跟得上，这是学习检测，平时做托福 TPO 也都是检测。换句话说，一篇文章从陌生到能复述是学习提高，而用一篇新文章看能否复述是学习检测。学习提高就像跑步，每天跑几圈，努力跑得更远，从而提升体能；学习检测就像在跑道上用秒表测时间，每个月跑步时间缩短说明练习有效。听说能力提高就是不断找更难的文章复述，努力延迟更长的时间复述，不断挑战极限，达到新的高度。

学生也会反馈："边听边复述太难了，完全跟不上。"请读者注意步骤，练习不要选用陌生的文章立即复述，因为这只是学习检测，而要选一篇文章先看懂听懂后试着复述。如果跟不上再回炉继续听和读，逐渐从不流利的复述过渡到有意识地延迟。读者必须体会那种从嘴皮子跟不上到不慌不忙地跟上的感觉。

背单词不难，只是边读边想感觉就够了，但复述文章确实有些枯燥，好不容易读懂了，打开听力又听不懂，听了几遍之后试着复述又傻眼了，完全跟不上，回过头再听再读。这正是最难最考验人的部分，很多学生以为在手机上装一个背单词 app 就是学习，以为看个英文电影就是学习，更有甚者以为听英文歌就是学习，如果英语这么好学，美国名校的录取岂不是易如反掌。

原则二　不仅要读出意思，还要读出结构

句子主干都是二（主谓）至四个词（主谓宾补），通常是三个词（主谓宾）。请注意找句子主干不是缩写句子，缩写句子就像给一个人减肥，减完他还是一个人，而找主干是找人的骨架，骨架不是一个人。"我们当中有人撒谎"（There is someone lying among us）的主干是"有人"（There is someone），相当于一句废话，"我们当中"是状语，"撒谎"是定语。

第一章《未雨绸缪——15 天本质提高托福阅读》中曾提到，结构是下意识读出来的，是在读意思的同时读出来的，这才是"更懂"的境界。

Essentially, a theory is an abstract, symbolic representation of what is conceived to be reality.

主干是 A theory is a representation，朗读时需要在 representation 后停顿，表示后面定语开始了。

At a time when hiring qualified people is becoming more difficult, employers who can eliminate invalid biases from the process have a distinct advantage.

主干是 employers have an advantage，朗读时除了逗号停顿外，process 后也需要停顿，表示定语结束。

Coinciding with the groundbreaking theory of biological evolution proposed by British naturalist Charles Darwin in the 1860s, British social philosopher Herbert Spencer put forward his own theory of biological and cultural evolution that all worldly phenomena, including human societies, changed over time, advancing toward perfection.

如果读者对动词作状语非常熟悉，就能快速略过动词状语 coinciding 和 advancing，同时 that 引导的定语从句以及 including 状语插入语也可以略读，迅速抓住主干：Herbert Spencer put forward a theory。朗读时除了逗号停顿外，第一个和第二个 evolution 后都需要停顿，都是六个格子的分界处。

此原则的另一个应用是一长串单词并不都是句子，有时只是一个名词或一个动词而已，成为句子的充分必要条件是里面包含谓语结构。例如：

racially–based negative prejudgments against a group generally accepted as a race in any given region of ethnic competition

就是一个名词 prejudgments，意为“以种族为基础针对某个群体的负面的预判，该群体在任何给定的种族竞争地区被普遍认为是一个种族”。

using an email address specifically for your job search

就是一个动词 use，其他词都是附带的。

原则三　定状后置使得中国人读英语如坐针毡

中英文语序最大的不同是前者定状前置，后者定状后置。网上段子说：“我在 2016 年的新年目标就是完成 2015 年那些本该在 2014 年完成的我在 2013 年就信誓旦旦要完成的 2012 年制定的目标。”此句主干就是“目标是目标”，中文定语都放在了名词的左边。中文状语也是前置的，比如“从前有座山”“今天我吃饭”“我今天吃饭”等，而英语的语序是“我吃饭今天”（I had dinner today）。请注意以下例句的定状后置：

She is a girl beautiful in the eye.

她是一个眼睛很漂亮的女孩。

The girl in the red hat is my sister.

戴红帽子的女孩是我的姐姐。

The woman who needs constant attention has been put into intensive care.

这个需要长期照料的女人已被送进特别护理病房。

Urbanization will become increasingly important in the future.

城市化未来将会变得越来越重要。

The team suffered a major setback when their best player was injured.

当球队最好的队员受伤之后，球队遭受了巨大的挫折。

She died two years later, leaving everything to her husband.

她两年后去世，把所有遗产都留给了丈夫。

要适应英语的定状后置，尤其是特别长的定状后置，需要专项训练，详细讲解请参见第五章《倍道而进——长定语如何不觉得长》。

原则四　前置是为了强调

大部分人都是从左往右阅读，先看到的内容往往印象更深，比如著名的诗句有：“易求无价宝，难得有情郎”，重点是强调“易求”和“难得”，如果按照正常语序“无价宝易求，有情郎难得”强调的效果就打折了；再者，当定状比较长的时候肯定会往后放，因为长的内容重点不突出，人们更喜欢把短的内容说完后再慢慢说长的内容。

英语之所以定状后置，是因为被定状修饰的内容更为重要，定状尤其是较长的定状经常不被强调；之所以有形式主语、形式宾语，是因为用 it 代替较长的主语、宾语使得前半部分句意完整，太长的内容不容易强调；之所以有强调句，正是因为要强调往前放的部分；之所以有倒装句，也是为了强调倒装的部分。但凡英语的语序特殊，阅读时就要用语感体会对前置部分的强调。

定状前置

定状本来就“游离于”主干之外，经常后置，如果提前，很明显是为了强调。

Indeed, had it not been for the superb preservation of these fossils, they might well have been classified as dinosaurs.

请体会此句和 Indeed, they might well have been classified as dinosaurs had it not been for the superb preservation of these fossils 的不同。前者强调从句，即从句和主句的因果关系，后者强调主句，从句变成可有可无的“伴随状态”。

To appreciate fully the diversity and abundance of life in the sea, it helps to think small.

要充分认识海洋生命的多样性和丰富性，从小处思考大有裨益。

主句里 it 是形式主语，真正的主语是 to think。此句还想强调动词状语 to appreciate，如果写成正常语序：To think small helps, to appreciate fully the diversity and abundance of life in the sea 就平淡无奇了。

另外此句还有宾语后置现象，appreciate 的宾语是 diversity 和 abundance，fully 副词状语本来的位置是最后，此处提前是为了通过把 fully 和 appreciate 放到一起强调 fully，然后把较长的宾语往后放，详细讲解请参见第八章第三节《宾语后置现象如何破？》。

还有写作中常用的定语从句前置：

As is known to us all, failure usually results from laziness while diligence can result in success.

As is illustrated in the picture, a couple sleeps on the same bed but they seem to be rather isolated from each other.

两个 as 引导的都是定语从句而非状语从句，强调后文某个名词是“被所有人知道的”和“在图中被展示的”。

其他部分前置

Odd though it sounds, cosmic inflation is a scientifically plausible consequence of some respected ideas in elementary–particle physics.

宇宙膨胀说虽然听起来很奇特，但它是在科学上看似有理的推论，这个推论来自于基本粒子物理学中一些公认的理论。

正常语序是 though it sounds odd，此句强调 odd。

Accustomed though we are to speaking of the films made before 1927 as “silent”, the film has never been, in the full sense of the word, silent.

虽然我们习惯于将 1927 年以前的电影称为“无声的”，但就这个词的完整含义上说，电影从来没有真正无声过。

正常语序是 though we are accustomed to speaking of the films as silent，此句强调 accustomed。

iPad and iPhone, vivid and stimulating though these media are, have proved to be no substitute for newspapers.

尽管 iPad 和 iPhone 这些媒介既生动又刺激，但已被证明无法代替报纸。

正常语序是 though these media are vivid and stimulating，此句不仅强调 vivid and stimulating 还想强调主语 iPad 和 iPhone。如果写成 iPad and iPhone have proved to be no substitute for newspapers, though these media are vivid and stimulating. 语感完全不同。

还有经常用的 the more…, the more… 句型，前面的句子是状语从句，后面的句子是主句。

The more he gets, the more he wants.
The more she learns, the more she wants to learn.
The harder you work, the greater progress you will make.
都是强调两个前置的比较级。

并列句提前

并列句提前可以理解为作者特别想同时说两句话，形成对比。

典型例句分析

adj. 水藻的　　*n.* 食草动物　　并列连词

1 A low number of algal cells in the presence of a high number of grazers suggested, but did not prove, that the grazers had removed most of the algae.

n. 水藻

句子翻译

大量食草动物存在的同时却只有少量水藻细胞（这一事实）暗示了，但并不能证明，食草动物吞噬了大部分水藻。

难句解析

所谓把并列句合到一起就是把 did not prove 和 suggested 两个谓语动词放在一起形成强烈反差，作者生怕读者在读完 suggest 之后先入为主，认为这就是结论，所以赶紧加入 did not prove，倘若此句写成 A low number of algal cells in the presence of a high number of grazers suggested that the grazers had removed most of the algae, but it did not prove that the grazers had removed most of the algae. 不仅造成大量重复，读起来也没有重点。

2 Gutman argues convincingly that the stability of the Black family encouraged the transmission of-

此处并列句合在一起说补全后是 and so the stability of the Black family was crucial in sustaining the Black heritage，如果这样写不仅造成重复和冗长，还会少了两个谓语动词作为因果的感觉。

and so was crucial in sustaining—the Black heritage of folklore, music, and religious expression

名词作同位语解释 Black heritage　　有“制作”的意思

from one generation to another, a heritage that slaves were continually fashioning out of their

定语从句修饰 heritage。详细讲解请参见第四章第三节《较长的同位语如何破？》。

African and American experiences.

句子翻译

古特曼令人信服地论辩道，黑人家庭的稳定有助于民间传说、音乐以及宗教表达等黑人文化遗产一代一代传递下去，并且在维持此遗产的方面也起着至关重要的作用，这种文化遗产是黑奴们不断地从非洲和美洲的经历中逐渐形成的。

原则五 并列连词不能省略而且前后并列成分通常一致

可简单记为：看到连词想并列。英文是形合语言，讲究对称，阅读以下六个例句时尤其要注意用语感发现 and 后的内容和前面哪个对应，熟练后能化长句为短句：

典型例句分析

conj. 虽然　动词作状语，open 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是将来发生

3 They were fighting, albeit discreetly, to open the intellectual world to the new science and to

介词短语作状语　后面是 to liberate，那么它只能和 to do 并列，也就是前面的 to open

介词短语作补语，对应的谓语动词是 envisioned

liberate intellectual life from ecclesiastical philosophy and envisioned their work as contributing to

介词短语作状语　*adj.* 教会的　后面是 envisioned，那么它只能和 did 并列，即 were fighting

the growth, not of philosophy, but of research in mathematics and physics.

同样是前后介词短语并列，非常对称

句子翻译

带着谨慎，他们为学术界打开新科学的大门而奋斗，为把学术生命从教会哲学中解脱出来而奋斗，同时他们将自己的工作视为对数学和物理学的研究发展做贡献而不是对哲学发展做贡献。

traditional methods 和 established vocabularies 宾语并列。此句容易误认为 established 和 wished 并列，等读到 and to explore 的时候要用语感判断出来读错了。

4 She wished to discard the traditional methods and established vocabularies of such dance forms

动词作宾语　动词作定语修饰 vocabularies

as ballet and to explore the internal sources of human expressiveness.

to discard 和 to explore 宾语并列　动词作宾语

句子翻译

她希望抛弃传统的方法以及像芭蕾这样的舞蹈形式的已确立的词汇，她还希望探索人类表达方式的内在源泉。

介词短语作状语　状语从句　副词作状语　状语从句　定语从句修饰 peoples

5 We are obliged to them because some of these languages have since vanished, as the peoples

动词作补语，对应的谓语动词是 became，此结构相当于 She is beautiful　可数名词意为“民族”

who spoke them died out or became assimilated and lost their native languages.

定语从句修饰 peoples　died out 和 became 并列　became 和 lost 并列然后一起和 died out 并列

句子翻译

我们感激他们是因为这些语言中的一些从此之后消失了，随着说这些语言的民族灭绝或者随着这些民族因被同化而丧失了母语。

n. 意识形态　定语从句修饰 ideology

6 Their distrust was caused, in part, by a national ideology that proclaimed farming the greatest

名词作补语，对应的谓语动词是 proclaimed

occupation and rural living superior to urban living.

farming 和 rural living 宾语并列　形容词作补语

句子翻译

他们的不信任部分由一种全民意识形态引起，这种意识形态宣称耕作是最伟大的职业并且乡村生活优于城市生活。

n. 停滞　stagnation 和 decline 主语并列

7 Lengthy periods of economic stagnation or decline have almost always left society more mean-

形容词作补语，对应的谓语动词是 left

spirited and less inclusive, and have usually stopped or reversed the advance of rights and freedoms.

have left 和 have stopped or reversed 谓语动词并列　have stopped 和 have reversed 并列。这两个是低一层的并列，它们一起和 have left 并列。

句子翻译

长期的经济停滞和衰退几乎总是让社会更加小气和不包容，同时常常停止甚至逆转人权和自由的进步。

介词短语作补语　定语从句修饰 people

8 Our country's educational system is in the grips of people who joyfully and militantly proclaim

their hostility 和 their eagerness 宾语并列，their 就是暗示并列避免歧义的词

their hostility to intellect and their eagerness to identify with children who show the least

动词作定语修饰 eagerness　定语从句修饰 children

intellectual promise.

句子翻译

我们国家的教育体系掌握在这样一些人的手中，他们沾沾自喜、霸气十足地公然宣称对才学的敌视，还迫不及待地宣称一些孩子在才学方面很难造就。

状语从句　介词短语作状语　*n.* 思潮，风气　动词作定语修饰 change

9 This is so even though armed forces operate in an ethos of institutional change oriented toward

in an ethos 和 under the sanction 状语并列　*n./vt.* 制裁；批准；约束

occupational equality and under the federal sanction of equal pay for equal work.

介词短语作状语

句子翻译

即使武装部队在一种趋向职业平等的制度变迁的风气中运作，同时在联邦政府同工同酬的约束下运作，情况仍然如此。

adj. 准确无误的　介词短语作定语修饰 sense　of the moment 和 of how 定语并列

10 He had an unerring sense of the revolutionary moment, and of how historical evidence could

介词短语作定语修饰 sense　名词从句，how 在从句中作状语

undermine the mythological tradition that was crushing the dreams of new social possibilities.

定语从句修饰 tradition

句子翻译

他有一种正确的对革命性时刻的感觉，同时也有一种正确的对历史证据如何破坏虚构的传统的感觉，这种虚构的传统粉碎了新社会可能性的梦想。

adj. 过剩的 *n.* 过剩　*n.* 购买力　*n.* 暴政，专横

11 No surplus of accumulated purchasing power stands between him and the tyrannies of unfriendly

of unfriendly nature 和 of the equally unfriendly wielders 定语并列　介词短语作定语修饰 tyrannies

nature or of the equally unfriendly wielders of political and economic power.

介词短语作定语修饰 tyrannies　*vt.* 运用，行使

句子翻译

在个人与不友善的大自然的残暴之间以及个人与同样冷酷无情的政治、经济权力主宰者的残暴之间，不存在积累的购买力过剩。

adj. 无知的 ignorant：形容词作补语　介词短语作状语

12 He was entirely ignorant of what the bottle in his pocket contained, of the nature of the illness from

介词短语作状语　介词短语作状语　名词从句　定语从句修饰 illness。详细讲解请参见第四章第五节《关系代词前有介词的定语从句如何破？》。

which his friend was suffering, and of what had previously been wrong with his wife, but a medicine

of what、of the nature 和 of what 三个状语并列　名词从句　ignorant 和 but 构成 not…but… 结构

that had worked so well in one form of illness would surely be of equal benefit in another, and

定语从句修饰 medicine　介词短语作补语

comforted by the thought of the help he was bringing to his friend, he hastened to his friend's house.

动词作状语，comfort 和主语的关系是被动，和谓语动词是先后发生　省略 that 的定语从句修饰 help

句子翻译

他全然不知道瓶子里装的什么药，也不清楚他朋友患的什么病以及他妻子以前有什么不舒服，他只知道一种药对一种疾病有效必然对另一种疾病同样有效，带着去帮助朋友的宽慰，他匆匆向朋友家走去。

阅读到此能发现前面句子已经完整结束，所以下意识能体会到此处是并列句连词。　定语从句修饰 species

13 Learning appropriate social behaviors is especially important and species that live in groups, like

定语从句修饰 monkeys　动词作宾语　动词作宾语　介词短语作状语

young monkeys that needed to learn to control selfishness and aggression and to understand the

阅读到此通过 selfishness 和 aggression 的同范畴性能看出两者并列　看到 to understand 应该能发现它是和 to learn 并列的动词宾语

give-and-take involved in social groups.

句子翻译

学习合适的社交行为特别重要而且群居动物必须融入社交群体，例如需要学会控制私心和攻击心，并理解付出和收获过程的猴子。

原则六　英语经常通过代词、近义词、省略避免重复

通过代词避免重复

可简单记为：看到代词想指代。托福阅读题有一种专门的指代题，说明代词是测试学生是否读懂的一个指标。

Since power is concentrated in the hands of the rich, public policies will continue to reflect their interests rather than those of the poor.

既然权力集中在富人手中，公共政策将继续反映富人的利益而不是穷人的利益。

重复相同的内容会使文章冗长并极大减少美感，请注意上句的两个代词，很好地避免了重复。

英语是形合语言，比较结构必须对称，而中文不强求。中文“南方的天气比北方温暖”英语中必须说成 The climate of the south is warmer than that of the north，that 代词指代 climate，就是天气和天气比，如果省略就错了。再比如 My mother cooks better cookies than your mother does，有学生会丢掉最后的 does，句子就变成 cook cookies 比较 cook mother 了，句意会很可怕。再比如：

This may be illustrated by comparing the position of a nation with that of a private business enterprise.

这可以通过比较国家的处境与私营企业的处境阐明。

that 代词指代 position。国家的处境必须和处境比，处境不能和私营企业比。类似特点参见后文必杀句 10、29、80。

通过近义词避免重复

中文里“法律过松则守法者少；法律过严则执法者稀”，一个“少”一个“稀”就是用近义词让语言更美。

典型例句分析

n. 周围　　*vt.* 发动

14 The new accessibility of land around the periphery of almost every major city sparked an explosion of real estate development and fueled what we now know as urban sprawl.

宾语从句

并列的谓语动词 spark 和 fuel 用得很形象，意为“激发”“点燃”，近义词还有 stimulate，spur，ignite，incite，trigger，galvanize。

句子翻译

几乎每个大城市周边土地的新的可获得性激发了房地产开发的热潮并造成了我们现在称为“城市无计划扩张”的现象。

状语从句　代词指代 fossil record

15 Many plants and animals disappear abruptly from the fossil record as one moves from layers of rock documenting the end of the Cretaceous up into rocks representing the beginning of the Cenozoic (the era after the Mesozoic).

动词作定语修饰 rock　*n.* 白垩纪　*n.* 新生代　*n.* 中生代　动词作定语修饰 rocks。represent 和 document 这里都是“记录”的意思

句子翻译

很多植物和动物从化石记录里突然消失，随着化石记录从代表白垩纪晚期的岩层移动到代表新生代早期（中生代之后的一个时期）的岩层。

通过省略避免重复

并列结构经常伴随省略，较难读懂。例如富兰克林的名言“Prosperity discovers vice, adversity virtue.”省略了相同的谓语动词 discover；拿破仑的名言“Leaders have the rights to be beaten, but never the rights to be surprised.”省略了相同的谓语动词 have；再比如奥斯卡·王尔德的名言“Most people are other people. Their thoughts are someone else's opinions, their lives a mimicry, their passions a quotation.”（大多数人都不是自己。他们的思想是别人的观点，他们的生活是对别人的模仿，他们的激情是对别人的引述。）

有了这种省略可以继而把连词也省略，因为不会有歧义。例如：

动词作主语　*n.* 自发性

16 In both oral and written English, talking is triumphing over speaking, spontaneity over craft.

句子翻译

在口头和书面英语中，交谈胜过讲话，自发大于技术。

请读者找出以下例句省略的成分：

It is now established that the Milky Way is far more extended and of much greater mass than was hitherto thought.

后半句补全后是 of much greater mass than the Milky Way was hitherto thought。

In experiments, an injection of cytoplasm from dextral eggs changes the pattern of sinistral eggs, but an injection from sinistral eggs does not influence dextral eggs.

后半句补全后是 but an injection of cytoplasm from sinistral eggs does not influence the pattern of dextral eggs。

Govern your thoughts when alone, and your tongue when in company.

后半句补全后是 Govern your thoughts when alone, and govern your tongue when in company.

The environment would determine human's fate, as it would the fate of the animals.

后半句补全后是 as it would determine the fate of the animals。

典型例句分析

定语从句修饰 sex ratio　　省略 that 的定语从句修饰 descendants

17 That sex ratio will be favored which maximizes the number of descendants an individual will have

后半句补全后是 and which hence maximizes the number of gene copies transmitted

and hence the number of gene copies transmitted.

副词作状语　　动词作定语修饰 copies

句子翻译

那种性别比例将会被偏好，它最大化个体的后代数量，因此最大化传到后代身上的基因副本数量。

难句解析

两个 which 引导的定语从句都放到最后是为了强调谓语结构 will be favored。较短的谓语先说完使得句意完整，再说很长的定语部分。很长的内容往前放往往产生歧义，让人听不懂，这就是为什么英语中忌讳头重脚轻的句子。

主语从句　　预判后面有 but

18 What is called modern civilization is not the result of a balanced development of all man's nature,

后半句补全后是 but the result of accumulated knowledge

but of accumulated knowledge applied to practical life.

动词作定语修饰 knowledge

句子翻译

所谓现代文明不是人类全部本性均衡发展的结果，而是积累的知识应用于实际生活的产物。

状语从句　　介词短语作状语

19 As my own studies have advanced, I have been increasingly impressed with the functional

后半句补全后是 I have been less so impressed with the structural differences　介词短语作状语

similarities between insect and vertebrate societies and less so with the structural differences that

介词短语作定语修饰 similarities　定语从句修饰 differences。该定语从句最好称为关系从句，详细讲解请参见第五章第三节《关系从句如何破？》，传统的定语从句更多是“限定”，而关系从句是“补充说明”。

seem, at first glance, to constitute such an immense gulf between them.

动词作补语

句子翻译

随着我的研究不断深入，我对昆虫和脊椎动物群落之间功能的相似性越来越印象深刻，而对乍一看组成它们之间巨大鸿沟的结构上差异越来越印象淡漠。

动词作定语修饰 qualities

20 In general, the tests work most effectively when the qualities to be measured can be most precisely

后半句补全后是 the tests work least effectively when…

defined and least effectively when what is to be measured or predicted cannot be well defined.

主语从句

句子翻译

一般来说，当需要测试的特征能精确界定时测试最为有效，而当需要测试或预测的东西不能明确界定时测试效果最差。

名词从句

21 The correlation of carbon dioxide with temperature, of course, does not establish whether changes

后半句补全后是 changes in atmospheric composition were caused by the warming and cooling trends

in atmospheric composition caused the warming and cooling trends or were caused by them.

句子翻译

当然，二氧化碳与大气温度之间的联系并不能确定是大气成分的变化导致了气候的冷暖趋势，还是大气成分的变化被气候的冷暖趋势所导致。

n. 困境　　*n.* 蚀　*vt.* 使黯然失色　　同位语从句解释 fact

22 The desperate plight of the South has eclipsed the fact that reconstruction had to be undertaken

后半句补全后是 the reconstruction had to be undertaken less spectacularly in the North than in the South

also in the North, though less spectacularly.

句子翻译

南方恶劣的困境遮蔽了北方同样需要开始重建这一事实，尽管不那么引人注目。

副词作状语　状语从句　*adj.* 庸俗的，粗俗的　*n./v.* 闪光　补全后是 life is not a vulgar flare

23 But, if this world is not merely a bad joke, life a vulgar flare amid the cool radiance of the stars,

补全后是 existence is not an empty laugh　*n./v.* 粗声说 动词作定语修饰 laugh　状语从句。此处 if 引导的两个状语从句一起和前面 if 引导的三个状语从句并列。

and existence an empty laugh braying across the mysteries; if these intimations of something

动词作定语修饰 humor　*n.* 异想天开，怪念头　动词作定语修饰 whimsies

behind and beyond are not evil humor born of indigestion, or whimsies sent by devil to mock and

动词作状语，mock 和 madden 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是将来发生

madden us, if, in a word, beauty means something, yet we must not seek to interpret the meaning.

状语从句，作为状语的总结　副词作状语　动词作宾语

句子翻译

但是，如果这个世界不只是一个拙劣的玩笑，如果生命不只是惨淡星光里平凡的闪烁，如果人生不只是透过神秘世界空洞的笑声；如果对某种玄妙事物的暗示并非是误解产生的邪念也并非是魔鬼送来嘲笑和逼疯我们的怪念头，总而言之，如果美有某种意义的话，我们万不可去试图阐明它的意义。

原则七　省略的最终形式是不产生歧义

传统语法经常讲某某词不能省，比如定语从句中“关系代词 that 所指代的先行词在从句中作宾语时 that 可省”。其实省略的目的就是不产生歧义的情况下尽可能简短，所谓 Brevity is beauty（简短即美），一旦可能产生歧义，该词就不能省了。

例如：

1. The news that discouraged him was not true.
2. The news that I heard on the radio was not true.
3. The news I heard on the radio was not true.

句 1 倘若省略 that 会混淆主句和从句，也就是不知道 discouraged 和 was 到底哪个是谓语动词。句 2 省略 that 后成为句 3，news 不会和 heard 抢谓语，所以 I 和 heard 在一起，news 和 was 在一起，如果保留 that 反而有点碍手碍脚。

4. This is the village that gave birth to many famous people.
5. This is the village that I visited last year.

同理请分析句 4 和句 5，句 4 中 that 去掉会出现两个动词抢 village，句 5 中 that 去掉后两个动词和两个名词各归各位。

关于宾语从句，以前的讲法是“多个宾语从句并列时最后一个 that 不能省，前面的都可以省”。例如：

6. I believe that you have done your best and that things will get better.

这里不妨就把最后一个 that 省略，变成 I believe you have done your best and things will get

better，很明显 and 形成了并列句，things 和 I 并列，产生了歧义，而作者只想表达两个 that 都是主语 I 相信的内容。

另外以前学的是 whether 和 if 都可以引导名词从句，其实在正式文体中 if 是不能引导的，因为会产生歧义。比如：

7. I don't know whether you are right.

如果用 if 替代则读者有可能理解为 If you are right, I don't know。

原则八 困知勉行，提升阅读能力的唯一方法是反复读熟难句

有两个阅读误区极为普遍：一是喜欢读自己读得懂的句子和文章，从不挑战更高难度，导致进境缓慢；二是不按照语法结构停顿或分拆，读懂就满足，不再企盼更懂的境界，其实这只达到一种模糊的理解。要改掉错误习惯，首先必须选取足够难的资料，然后在读熟读顺的过程中体会形合语言的结构感，在合适的地方停顿，分清什么是读“懂”，什么是读得“更懂”。

例如 The question being settled, we wound up the meeting“读懂”是指读出来：“问题被解决，会议结束了”。而“更懂”是知道独立主格现象，包含了逻辑主语 question 和非谓语动词 being settled 之间的主动或被动关系，还包含了非谓语动词 being settled 和谓语动词 wind up 之间的时间先后关系。此句真正的意思是“只要解决这个问题，会议马上就结束”，言下之意是会议最重要的事就是解决这个问题，一旦解决，会议的目的就达到了。

典型例句分析

24 介词短语作状语　*adv.* 清楚地，明确地　宾语从句

Despite these vague categories, one should not claim unequivocally that hostility between recognizable classes cannot be legitimately observed.

介词短语作定语修饰 hostility

adv. 合理地，合法地

句子翻译

尽管存在这些模糊范畴，但我们不应该断然声称在各个易于辨别的阶层之间的敌对态度就无法被合理地观察。

难句解析

读者要反复读熟的一定是含有双重否定的版本而不是将两个 not 都去掉的简化版本。

宾语从句　　介词短语作状语

25 Perhaps he believed that he could not criticize American foreign policy without endangering the

定语从句修饰 civil rights

support for civil rights that he had won from the federal government.

句子翻译

可能他相信他自己不能在不危及他从联邦政府那里已获得的公民权利的支持的情况下批评美国外交政策。

难句解析

此句不仅要熟读双重否定还要体会状语后置的语感，中文翻译定状全在前。

资料越难，效率越高

另一个阅读提高条件是学习更难的句子，不断挑战能承受的最高难度并通过读熟适应这种难度，最终超过托福考试水平，稳拿高分。很多英语学习者眼中中高考、四六级、托福雅思、GRE、GMAT 等考试是完全不同的考试，就像圆心往不同方向发散的半径，每个方向都不同。其实英语考试本质上都一样，词汇量也是包含关系。所以各大英语考试应该是一条直线上不同的点，近的点容易，远的点难，远的会了近的一定会。

现在小学生都会定语从句，美国研究生入学考试 GRE 中也有定语从句，只是难度不同。以下定语例句由易到难排列，一般的教学方法是花费大量时间从句 1 学到句 5，但笔者更愿意教完句 1 直接教句 5，在合适的引导下学生肯定能学会，读熟句 5 后前面几句都不需要学了，这才是高效的学习。

1. Jasper White is one of those rare people who believes in ancient myths.
2. My tongue was busy searching out the hole where the tooth had been.
3. Glancing at the bits of wood and metal that lay around him, the man sadly picked up the mattress and carried it into his house.
4. Mrs. Anne Sterling did not think of the risk she was taking when she ran through a forest after two men.
5. Big Ben takes its name from Sir Benjamin Hall who was responsible for the making of the clock when the new Houses of Parliament were being built.

原则九　端本正源，阅读能力强就是预判能力强

阅读能力的本质是“预判”，即阅读时能预知后面的内容，这需要一定阅读经验积累。水平一般的考生经常需要往复很多次才能读懂，这样浪费了大量时间。

预判具体体现在读到 not 能预判后面有 but；读到 which 能预判这个定语从句肯定修饰前面的名词；读到 the fact that 能预判后面是同位语从句表示解释；读到 instead of 能预判后面的名词结

构是不重要的；读到 so 能预判 that 状语从句后说的是 so 什么的程度；读到比较级能预判后面有 than；听到 Having said that，对应中文的“正如之前提到的”，预判接下来的主语是主动说，谓语动词是在说之后发生的；主句之后读到 leaving，预判补充说明的语感，而且逻辑上后于主句发生；先读到从句能预判重点在后面的主句；读完文章第一段能预判这篇文章的基本观点，读完每一段第一句能预判本段大意是什么。

学生曾问这个句子怎么理解：While it is true that the olfactory powers of humans are nothing like as fine as those possessed by certain animals, they are still remarkably acute.

如果预判用得好，一是看到 while 状语从句基本可以略过，重点是主句，于是重点阅读 they are acute；二是通过 still 能预判有“仍旧”的意思，多半是“人类嗅觉仍旧很灵敏”。

以下五个句子是较难的预判实例：

典型例句分析

26

宾语从句　　预判后面有 but also

These researchers have sought to demonstrate that their work can be a valuable tool not only of

介词短语作定语修饰 tool　　介词短语作定语修饰 tool

science but also of history, providing fresh insights into the daily lives of ordinary people whose

动词作状语，provide 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是同时发生。　　定语从句修饰 people

existences might not otherwise be so well documented.

副词作状语

句子翻译

这些研究人员努力证明了他们的工作不仅对于科学而且对历史都是有价值的工具，为了解普通人的日常生活提供了崭新的观点，否则这些普通人的生活不可能记录得这么好。

27

状语从句　状语从句

I have excluded him because, while his accomplishments may contribute to the solution of moral problems,

预判后面有 but

he has not been charged with the task of approaching any but the factual aspects of those problems.

句子翻译

我把他排除在外是因为，尽管他的成就可能有助于道德问题的解决，但他承担的任务只不过是探讨那些问题的事实层面而已。

难句解析

not…but… 非常常见，也是托福阅读句子简化题的出题点。例如阅读原文：

Gradual changes of species are all but invisible over the short time scale of modern observations, and, it is argued, they are usually obscured by innumerable gaps in the imperfect fossil record.

这种渐变现代观测短期内几乎看不见，而且有人认为这些渐变经常被有缺陷的化石记录的无数间断所掩盖。

原文里 all but 与 not…but 含义相反，而且出题者专门针对 all but 设置了错误选项：

Darwin's evolutionary thesis was rejected because small changes could not be observed in the evolutionary record.

达尔文的进化命题因为小的渐变不能在进化过程中被观察到而被否定。

28 介词短语作状语　形容词作后置定语修饰 body temperature　定语从句修饰 trying

Instead of trying to keep down the body temperature deep inside the body, which would involve the expenditure of water and energy, desert mammals allow their temperatures to rise to what would normally be fever height, and temperatures as high as 46 degrees Celsius have been measured in Grant's gazelles.

动词作补语　名词从句

n. 葛氏瞪羚

句子翻译

沙漠哺乳动物并不试图将体内深处的温度控制得很低，这么做将会导致水和能量的消耗，而是允许体温上升至平常认为是高烧的温度，有人曾在葛氏瞪羚身上测到高达 46 摄氏度的体温。

29 In today's prosperous and increasingly conservative Japan, the traditional Omiai Kekkon, or arranged marriage, is thriving.

名词作同位语解释 Omiai Kekkon。这种同位语的解释关系在托福阅读中极为常见，阅读高分不意味着必须认识所有单词。

句子翻译

在当今繁荣并越发保守的日本，传统的包办婚姻依旧繁盛。

原则十　大道至简，做阅读考题的唯一方法是“定位”和“读懂”

不仅仅是托福，所有英语考试阅读部分都是“定位”和“读懂”两步。定位就用题干关键词在原文中定位，读懂就是读懂定位到的原文和同义改写的选项。这一原则是对出题过程的逆向思考，出题过程就是出题者对原文的重点句或重点段设置选项，即读懂和定位。正确选项是对原文的改写，错误选项是考生有可能产生的误解。为了提高考试效度，正确选项会做到意思一致但表面上和原文差别大，而错误选项会在用词上尽量贴近原文但意思貌合神离。

托福阅读有十大题型：词汇题、事实信息题、否定事实信息题、推理题、修辞目的题、指代题、句子简化题、句子插入题、文章小结题、表格题。词汇题要求尽量不看原文直接选，词汇题存在的目的就是节省时间和提高正确率，如果总要分析原文猜测词义说明基础太弱了；文章小结题和表格题需要凭阅读印象选出总结概括性句子，无关的甚至错误的细节均不能选。除了这三种题型不需定位外其余七种题型全是定位和读懂这两步，尤其是否定事实信息题更需定位四次，指代题、句子插入题、句子简化题对读懂的要求特别高，特别是句子简化题，硬生生地考学生有没有读懂。

定位靠做题经验以及对出题者思路的揣摩，在新东方十余年的真题教学经验让笔者养成了时刻猜对方怎么想的阅读习惯，几个小时的培训课可以解决定位，而考生的痛点都在读懂。以下是运用定位读懂的实例：

阅读例题一

According to Paragraph 4, which of the following is true of waterlogged soils?

Their upper layers are usually sandy and porous.

They cannot support savannas.

They contain little oxygen.

They are prone to the leaching of nutrients and minerals.

对于事实信息题，很明显题干关键词是 waterlogged soils，一般名词很难被同义替换，基本能找到，而形容词、动词等抽象词汇较容易被替换。选出关键词以后回到原文定位，读懂原句和选项，基本大功告成了。总体来说，用来定位的关键词是较难被同义替换的词汇，经常是名词，尤其是专有名词，但有时也会是形容词或动词。做题经验多了，迅速读出题干关键词也成了一种语感。

阅读例题二

According to Paragraph 1, the situation for Siam's old ruling families changed in all of the following ways EXCEPT:

Their incomes were reduced.

Their sons were posted as district officers in distant provinces.

They could sell lands that had traditionally belonged to them.

They had less control over the rural populations.

否定事实信息题是事实信息题的取反。经常需要定位四次才能做出来，更能考出学生水平。从出题者角度来说，否定事实信息题更容易出题，因为只需“编”一个错误选项，而事实信息题需要编三个，否定事实信息题出题频率更高。

定位时很多考生会犯的错误是仅仅凭读段落的整体印象仓促做题，导致被错误选项迷惑，因为出题者用来迷惑我们的选项也是从文章里把别的细节改过来的，不是乱写的。所以笔者建议考生一定要回头看文章确信答案之后再选，所谓“答案在题中而不在心中”。

阅读例题三

Look at the four squares that indicate where the following sentence could be added to the

passage. Where would the sentence best fit?

They require relatively little protection or nutrients.

句子插入题表面上是看句子插入原文哪个位置最合适，但如果洞悉考查目的，此题关键不在放到原文读四次感觉哪次最顺，而是要揣摩为什么出题者选择把这个句子拿出来作插入而不是别的句子，还要揣摩该句前后文会说什么，这一点往往不看文章都可以猜出来，最后对照原文拼图拼进去。

之所以选择某句作插入题是因为这句话和前后文会有紧密的联系，比如指代、逻辑关系等。例如中文句子“这一做法会带来大量争议”，前文肯定会提到某个做法，后文多半会说说都有哪些争议，只有具有这种拼图特点的句子才会出成句子插入题。国内考研阅读中的七选五也是类似的出题思路。上例主语是 they，前文一定会提到复数名词，如果需要保护和营养的话肯定指代的是生命体，只需找具有这种特点的上下句即可。再比如：

The division of time no longer reflected the organization of religious ritual.

此句句意是“该时间分划不再反映宗教仪式的组织”，很明显，一个有水平的写作者前句一定会写时间如何划分，后句有可能写那么会反映什么，或者宗教仪式会怎么样。前后句都能对上就是答案。

培训课程讲什么

英语考试培训一般讲考试方法，无法让学生能力产生本质提高，大班宣讲更不可能。对于自觉性强的学生，最好开课前自己通过精听精读先提高能力，试着做些题，感觉真题的难度，只有自己能做对大部分题再听课才有自信，课上和老师讨论最难的题。培训课是锦上添花，而不是雪中送炭。千万不要认为报一个托福班就有高分了，更不要以为报一个班没考高分，再报三个就能稳拿高分，托福高分是学会的不是听会的。

其实一些培训课老师讲的题都经过精心挑选，不符合规律的题一律跳过不讲，讲题时还不断用中文暗示哪个选项正确哪个选项错误。这些老师过于关注教学过程而不是教学结果，往往不能提分。新一代名师的价值来源于两方面：一是从大量的阅读中搜集最精练的学习资料，这样学生只需要看精选后的资料，极大提高了学习效率；二是做大量真题，总结规律，洞悉考题本质，从出题者的角度分析考试。

托福高分需要三个必备条件：过硬的英语水平，对真题的详细分析以及自己练习真题体会做题的感觉。条件二可以听培训课解决，条件一和三自行学习效率更高，比如将本书必杀句反复读满 20 遍。自身能力真正提高后会觉得培训班的技巧很傻，比如老师说插入语可以不读，但自己做题时多花三秒钟插入语也就读完了而且题也能做对，这是听课的最佳状态。

综观整套托福考题，我们可以看出设置听说读写四个分项的本质。听力部分笔记不是非记不可，三五分钟的国外课堂如果真正听懂了，凭印象做选择题肯定没问题，又不是让学生默写全文，所谓不记笔记就不记得原文其实是因为没听懂；听力题干出现并被朗读时选项不出现，这样设置的目的是希望学生听完选项直接给出答案然后去选项里找对应，而不是对比四个选项得出正确答案；重听题都是带有隐含意思的表达，越是字面意思越不对；听力和阅读题本质都是同义改写，只不过听力要求从朗读中听出来，阅读要求从书面语中读出来，它们很多题都具有越是字面意思越不对，越和原文接近越不对的特点；词汇题题干词越难越不需要看原文，这类题用来节约时间和提高正确率，反而题干词越简单越需要对应原文确认含义。出题者的目的只有一个，就是让考试场景尽量贴近实际用英语的场景，他们最希望的是听懂读懂再选择，通过各种方式防止考生“猜”对。尽管钻考题空子能多做对几道题，但永远是歪门邪道，到了国外听课还是听不懂。

百句精练

S_1 A low number of algal cells in the presence of a high number of grazers suggested, but did not prove, that the grazers had removed most of the algae.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_2 Gutman argues convincingly that the stability of the Black family encouraged the transmission of—and so was crucial in sustaining—the Black heritage of folklore, music, and religious expression from one generation to another, a heritage that slaves were continually fashioning out of their African and American experiences.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_3 They were fighting, albeit discreetly, to open the intellectual world to the new science and to liberate intellectual life from ecclesiastical philosophy and envisioned their work as contributing to the growth, not of philosophy, but of research in mathematics and physics.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_4 She wished to discard the traditional methods and established vocabularies of such dance forms as ballet and to explore the internal sources of human expressiveness.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_5 We are obliged to them because some of these languages have since vanished, as the peoples who spoke them died out or became assimilated and lost their native languages.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_6 Their distrust was caused, in part, by a national ideology that proclaimed farming the greatest occupation and rural living superior to urban living.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_7 Lengthy periods of economic stagnation or decline have almost always left society more mean–spirited and less inclusive, and have usually stopped or reversed the advance of rights and freedoms.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_8 Our country's educational system is in the grips of people who joyfully and militantly proclaim their hostility to intellect and their eagerness to identify with children who show the least intellectual promise.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_9 This is so even though armed forces operate in an ethos of institutional change oriented toward occupational equality and under the federal sanction of equal pay for equal work.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{10} He had an unerring sense of the revolutionary moment, and of how historical evidence could undermine the mythological tradition that was crushing the dreams of new social possibilities.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{11} No surplus of accumulated purchasing power stands between him and the tyrannies of unfriendly nature or of the equally unfriendly wielders of political and economic power.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{12} He was entirely ignorant of what the bottle in his pocket contained, of the nature of the illness from which his friend was suffering, and of what had previously been wrong with his wife, but a medicine that had worked so well in one form of illness would surely be of equal benefit in another, and comforted by the thought of the help he was bringing to his friend, he hastened to his friend's house.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{13} Learning appropriate social behaviors is especially important and species that live in groups, like young monkeys that needed to learn to control selfishness and aggression and to understand the give–and–take involved in social groups.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{14} The new accessibility of land around the periphery of almost every major city sparked an explosion of real estate development and fueled what we now know as urban sprawl.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{15} Many plants and animals disappear abruptly from the fossil record as one moves from layers of rock documenting the end of the Cretaceous up into rocks representing the beginning of the Cenozoic (the era after the Mesozoic).

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{16} In both oral and written English, talking is triumphing over speaking, spontaneity over craft.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{17} That sex ratio will be favored which maximizes the number of descendants an individual will have and hence the number of gene copies transmitted.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{18} What is called modern civilization is not the result of a balanced development of all man's nature, but of accumulated knowledge applied to practical life.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{19} As my own studies have advanced, I have been increasingly impressed with the functional similarities between insect and vertebrate societies and less so with the structural differences that seem, at first glance, to constitute such an immense gulf between them.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{20} In general, the tests work most effectively when the qualities to be measured can be most precisely defined and least effectively when what is to be measured or predicted cannot be well defined.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{21} The correlation of carbon dioxide with temperature, of course, does not establish whether changes in atmospheric composition caused the warming and cooling trends or were caused by them.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{22} The desperate plight of the South has eclipsed the fact that reconstruction had to be undertaken also in the North, though less spectacularly.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{23} But, if this world is not merely a bad joke, life a vulgar flare amid the cool radiance of the stars, and existence an empty laugh braying across the mysteries; if these intimations of something behind and beyond are not evil humor born of indigestion, or whimsies sent by devil to mock and madden us, if, in a word, beauty means something, yet we must not seek to interpret the meaning.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{24} Despite these vague categories, one should not claim unequivocally that hostility between recognizable classes cannot be legitimately observed.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{25} Perhaps he believed that he could not criticize American foreign policy without endangering the support for civil rights that he had won from the federal government.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{26} These researchers have sought to demonstrate that their work can be a valuable tool not only of science but also of history, providing fresh insights into the daily lives of ordinary people whose existences might not otherwise be so well documented.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{27}$ I have excluded him because, while his accomplishments may contribute to the solution of moral problems, he has not been charged with the task of approaching any but the factual aspects of those problems.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{28}$ Instead of trying to keep down the body temperature deep inside the body, which would involve the expenditure of water and energy, desert mammals allow their temperatures to rise to what would normally be fever height, and temperatures as high as 46 degrees Celsius have been measured in Grant's gazelles.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{29}$ In today's prosperous and increasingly conservative Japan, the traditional Omiai Kekkon, or arranged marriage, is thriving.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

第四章

洞若观火——长名词结构化繁为简

学生读不懂长难句的根本原因是不熟悉长名词结构、长定语、长状语、长插入语、特殊语序和特殊表达这六个难点。第一个难点是长名词结构，根据六个格子理论，长主语、长宾语、长补语和长同位语都属于长名词结构，即较长的内容相当于一个名词，而不是一个句子。

第一节　多重定语修饰名词如何破?

根据原则二，很多词在一起核心是一个名词，而不是句子。例如：

the effectiveness of science research in industry

the substantial additional financial costs associated with trying to restore his reputation in the community and correcting erroneous information

the interesting question of how there came to be such a concentration of pregnant ichthyosaurs in a particular place very close to their time of giving birth

根据原则九预判原则，读第一遍时就要预判核心词，避免多次重读才找出结构。

典型例句分析

同位语从句解释 theory

1 A century ago, Freud formulated his revolutionary theory that dreams were the disguised

宾语部分的核心

shadows of our unconscious desire and fears.

句子翻译

一个世纪以前弗洛伊德阐明了他的革命性理论，即梦是被我们无意识的欲望和恐惧掩盖的镜像。

宾语部分的核心，后面都是定语

2 In the railroads' prime years, between 1890 and 1920, there were a few individuals in the United

States, most of whom with solid railroading experience behind them, who made a profession of

动词作定语修饰 railroading–works

writing about railroading—works offering the ambience of stations, yards, and locomotive cabs.

句子翻译

1890 年到 1920 年间铁路的鼎盛时期，美国有少数一些人，他们大多有丰富的铁路经验，以写铁路题材为职业——作品围绕车站、停车场和火车头。

第二节　动词作主语如何破？

动词作主语会使得主语部分很长，因为动词附带的宾语还会附带定语。要记住不管主语部分多长，核心词始终是作主语的动词，比如：

Using an email address specifically for your job search eliminates the possibility that you will receive unwelcome emails in your primary mailbox.

In fact, caring for someone who loves as deeply and appreciates my efforts as much as Jimmy does has enriched my life more than anything else ever could have.

典型例句分析

动词作主语，请体会主语在哪里结束，然后 circumvents 带给我们谓语动词 does 的语感。

3 Talking about novels and stories primarily as instruments of ideology circumvents much of the fictional enterprise.

n. 企业；事业　　*vt.* 围绕；避开

句子翻译

把小说和故事首要地作为意识形态的工具来讨论阻碍了大部分的小说事业。

难句解析

有学生反映当某个结构特别长就不知道在哪里结束，这是因为我们对六个格子没有运用熟练，多积累阅读经验就能解决。关于这一问题前文有一个很好的比喻，要想养成正确习惯，需要“注意”和“反复”两个要素。

动词作主语　　动词作宾语

4 To take this approach to the New Englanders normally means to start with the Puritans' theological innovations and their distinctive ideas about the church—important subjects that we may not neglect.

innovations 和 ideas 并列　　介词短语作定语修饰 innovations 和 ideas

定语从句修饰 subjects

句子翻译

采用这种方法研究新英格兰人，通常意味着要以清教徒的神学创新和他们对教会的独特见解为起点，这些创新和见解是关于我们不会忽视的重要主题。

第三节　较长的同位语如何破?

有的句子包含两个主语或两个宾语，第二个主语或宾语我们称之为同位语。同位语存在的目的是解释前一个主语或宾语。名词或句子都可以作同位语，句子作同位语称为同位语从句，是同位语的一种情况。同位语偶尔前置表示强调。

典型例句分析

5 In the seventeenth century the organ, the clavichord, and the harpsichord became the chief instruments of the keyboard group, a supremacy they maintained until the piano supplanted them at the end of the eighteenth century.

n. 击弦古钢琴　*n.* 大键琴

名词作同位语解释前面整个主句，接下来是一个省略 that 的定语从句修饰 supremacy

句子翻译

17 世纪时，风琴、击弦古钢琴和大键琴成为键盘乐器的主要成员，这种一直由它们保持的至高无上的地位直到 18 世纪末才被钢琴取代。

6 A detailed study has been made of the prints using photogrammetry, a technique for obtaining measurements through photographs, which created a drawing showing all the curves and contours of the prints.

n. 摄影测量学

名词作同位语解释 photogrammetry。同位语的解释关系经常用来解释托福阅读中的专有名词。

n. 外形，轮廓

定语从句修饰前面整个主句

动词作定语修饰 drawing

句子翻译

已经使用摄影测量学（一种通过照片获得测量数据的技术）对脚印进行了详细的研究，生成了一张显示脚印所有曲线和轮廓的照片。

adj. 普遍的　名词作同位语解释 television　动词作定语修饰 technologies

7 Television—the most pervasive and persuasive of modern technologies, marked by rapid change

名词作同位语解释 era。era 的定语较长，为了平衡结构，所以作为后置定语加在了同位语上

and growth, is moving into a new era, an era of extraordinary sophistication and versatility, which

定语从句修饰 era

promises to reshape our lives and our world.

句子翻译

电视这项以迅速变化和发展为标志的最普遍的和最具说服力的现代技术，正在步入一个极为复杂和多样化的新时期，这个时期将重塑我们的生活和世界。

n. 讽刺，讽刺文学　状语从句　名词作同位语解释 refreshing stimulus

8 Satire has lived because readers appreciate a refreshing stimulus, an irreverent reminder that

代词指代 readers，根据原则六，要形成代词指代的下意识。　*adj.* 平凡的，陈腐的　同位语从句解释 irreverent reminder。类似 reminder 这种抽象名词后面往往跟同位语从句。

they lived in a world of platitudinous thinking, cheap moralizing, and foolish philosophy.

句子翻译

讽刺文学存在是因为读者欣赏令人耳目一新的刺激，这个刺激是不客气地提醒他们活在一个充满陈腐思想、廉价道德说教和愚蠢哲学的世界里。

名词作前置同位语解释 crows。这样写目的仍是为了强调前置的部分。

9 Keen observers and quick learners, crows are astute about the intentions of other creatures,

astute 和 adept 补语并列　*adj.* 机敏的，狡猾的

including researchers, and adept at avoiding them.

句子翻译

乌鸦是敏锐的观察者和快速的学习者，它们对其他生物的意图非常敏锐，包括研究人员的意图，并且善于躲开它们。

介词短语作状语，该状语较长

10 The argument that humans, even in prehistoric times, had some number sense, at least to the extent

同位语从句解释 argument　状语从句　介词短语作状语

of recognizing the concepts of more and less when some objects were added to or taken away from

形容词作补语　连词，表原因　形容词作定语修饰 sense

a small group, seems fair, for studies have shown that some animals possess such a sense.

句子翻译

甚至是在史前时代，至少在意识到一些物体从一个群体里增加或减少的程度方面人类已经有数字感

这一观点似乎很合理，因为研究已经表明某些动物具有这样的意识。

同位语从句解释 skepticism。从句主干是 a railroad could pay a profit。

副词作状语修饰 challenging 和 thinly settled，意为“如此富有挑战性并人口如此稀疏的地方”。

11 The primary reason was skepticism that a railroad built through so challenging and thinly settled a stretch of desert, mountain, and semiarid plain could pay a profit.

n. 怀疑论

动词作定语修饰 railroad

句子翻译

主要原因是存在一种怀疑主义，即人们怀疑途经如此富于挑战性并人口稀疏的大片沙漠、山区和半干旱平原的一条铁路能否盈利。

预判同位语从句

根据预判原则，重点是提前知道名词后面是同位语而不是定语从句，以上 reminder，argument，skepticism 都是抽象事物，往往接同位语从句来解释而不是定语从句。类似抽象名词还有 fact，idea，claim，evidence，belief，rumor，proof，news，message，suggestion，decision 等等。

典型例句分析

12 The hypothesis received additional support form from the fact that the greatest diversity in native American languages occurs along the west coast of the Americans, suggesting that this region has been settled the longest.

n. 假说

同位语从句解释 fact

宾语从句

动词作状语，suggest 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是同时发生

句子翻译

该假设从一个事实得到了更多的支持，即美国本土语言最大的多样性出现在西海岸沿岸，表明该地区是最早有人定居的地区。

同位语从句解释 fact

13 The fact that half of the known species are thought to inhabit the world's rain forests does not seem surprising, considering the huge numbers of insects that comprise the bulk of the species.

形容词作补语

定语从句修饰 insects

独立成分作状语，参见第二章第三节《动词作谓语谁都懂，动词作非谓语呢？》。

句子翻译

考虑到组成大部分物种的昆虫的巨大数量，认为半数的已知物种栖息在世界的雨林中这一事实看起来并不令人吃惊。

同位语从句的谓语动词非常抽象，“在上面休息”引申为“取决于”

14 But the idea that the journalist must understand the law more profoundly than an ordinary citizen rests on

同位语从句解释 idea　　根据原则九预判原则，预判后面有 than

an understanding of the established conventions and special responsibilities of the news media.

该定语结构简化为 A of B and C of D，中文翻译是 D 的 B 和 C 的 A。也就是 D 修饰 B 和 C，B 和 C 修饰 A

句子翻译

但是记者必须比普通公民更加深刻地理解法律这一观点，取决于对新闻媒体既定习俗和特殊责任的理解。

同位语从句解释 claims。此句同位语从句较长，极大隔开了主谓。

15 As a result, claims that eating a diet consisting entirely of organically grown foods prevents or cures

动词作主语　　动词作定语修饰 diet　　have become 和 form 并列，谓语动词时间一致

disease or provides other benefits to health have become widely publicized and form the basis for folklore.

句子翻译

最终，那些认为仅食用绿色食品就能防治疾病或者增进健康的观点变得广为人知并成为民间说法的来源。

状语从句。虽然从句较长但重心永远是主句，尽管主句没有任何类似 but 之类的词。

16 Although leaders are often thought to be people with unusual personal ability, decades of research

同位语从句解释 evidence

have failed to produce consistent evidence that there is any category of “natural leaders”

句子翻译

尽管领袖常被人认为是个人能力非比寻常的人，但是数十年的研究并没有提供一致的证据证明存在任何“天生的领袖”这一类型。

17 In fact, throughout the animal kingdom, from sponges to certain types of worms, shellfish, and all

名词作同位语解释 vertebrates，括号就是插入语，阅读时虽然可以跳过，但最好练就“正常读也花不了几秒钟”的能力。

vertebrates (creatures possessing a spinal column), there is evidence that transplants of cells or fragments of

状语从句，加上 only 以后意为“当且仅当”　　同位语从句解释 evidence

tissues into an animal are accepted only if they come from genetically compatible or closely related individuals.

adj. 一致的，兼容的

句子翻译

实际上，涵盖海绵、某些种类的蠕虫、贝类动物和所有脊椎动物（有脊柱的生物）的整个动物界都有证据表明，进入动物体的细胞或组织片断的移植当且仅当它们来自基因上相容或关系密切的个体时才被接受。

同位语从句解释 belief　　*adj.* 独立自主的，拥有最高统治权的

18 There was a belief that the new nations should be sovereign and independent states, large

动词作状语，be 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是将来发生　　形容词作定语修饰 states

enough to be economically viable and integrated by a particular set of laws.

viable 和 integrated 补语并列

句子翻译

曾经有这样一种信念，新国家应该是独立的主权国家，大到足以在经济上存活并拥有一整套与其相适应的特定法律。

n. 风俗　　定语从句修饰 mores

19 Mores, which embodied each culture's ideal principles for governing every citizen, were

同位语从句解释 belief　　很生动的谓语动词，“躺在……中”引申为“存在于……中”。

developed in the belief that the foundation of a community lies in the cultivation of individual

动词作定语修饰 individual powers，powers 和 place 的关系是被动和将来。

powers to be placed in service to the community.

句子翻译

通过制约每一位公民来体现各个文化理想准则的风俗在这样一个信念中形成，即社会基础存在于在服务社会的前提下个人能力的培养。

介词短语作状语　同位语从句解释 rumors　*n.* 猛犸象　动词作定语修饰 mammoths

20 Amid rumors that there were prehistoric mammoths wandering around the unknown region and that

并列的同位语从句解释 rumors，参见第三章原则五并列连词不能省略而且前后并列成分通常一致

somewhere in its wilds was a mountain of rock salt 80 by 45 miles in extent, the two captains set out.

完全倒装，这样写是为了强调宾语 somewhere，参见第八章第二节《完全倒装如何破？》

句子翻译

传言说有一些在这片未知区域活动的史前猛犸象，传言还说有一座范围在 80 乘 45 英里的巨大的盐石山在这片荒野的某个地方，在这些传言中两位船长出发了。

第四节　较长的主语从句、宾语从句如何破？

主语从句、宾语从句就是句子作主语、宾语，例如：That he finished writing the composition in such a short time surprised us all 和 He told me that both his sons had gone to college。

由 where，when，why，how，which 引导的主语从句、宾语从句是很多学生的知识盲点。重点是理解“where，when，why，how 引导的名词从句该词在从句中作状语”和“which，whose 引导的名词从句该词在从句中作定语”这两句话。例如 I know where he lives 宾语从句部分 he lives 明显缺状语；I want to know which pen is mine 宾语从句部分 which 作定语修饰 pen；同理还有 A lot of students do not know which countries the United States fought against in the Second World War。朗读时还需注意 which 或 whose 和后面的名词之间不能停顿。

典型例句分析

21

主语从句，how 在从句中作状语　*n./v.* 操纵；演习　*adj.* 明显的　*vt.* 表明，证实

How critical this eye maneuvering is to the maintenance of conversational flow becomes manifest when two speakers are wearing dark glasses.

形容词作从句中的补语　介词短语作状语　形容词作补语　状语从句

句子翻译

谈话双方戴着墨镜时双方眼神交流在保持交谈通畅方面的重要性变得不言而喻。

22

介词短语作定语修饰 factories

There were factories in occupations such as metalwork where individual contractors presided over what were essentially handicraft proprietorships that coexisted within a single building.

宾语从句　定语从句修饰 factories，where 在从句中作状语，中文的语感是“在先行词这个地方”。　定语从句修饰 proprietorships

句子翻译

有一些金属制造专业的工厂，在工厂里个体承包商管理在同一幢楼里本质上是手工艺品所有权的东西。

介词短语作定语修饰 variation

宾语从句的谓语动词

23 The variation between the hemispheres corresponds to which side of the body is used to perform specific activities.

宾语从句，which 在从句中作定语修饰 side。请重点体会 which 限定 side 的语感，即“哪一边”。

句子翻译

大脑半球间的不同与身体的哪一部分用来进行特定的活动是对应的。

副词作状语修饰 little，意为“太而不能”，即“如此少的信息以至于不能确认”。

动词作状语，specify 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是将来发生

24 Human genes contain too little information even to specify which hemisphere of the brain each of a human's 10'' neurons should occupy, let alone the hundreds of connections that each neuron makes.

宾语从句的谓语动词

宾语从句，which 在从句中作定语修饰 hemisphere，意为“人类这种神经应该占据的哪个半脑”。请重点体会 which 限定 hemisphere 的语感。

连词，意为“更不用说”。例如：She does not have enough money for a new car, let alone a luxury sedan.

定语从句修饰 connections

句子翻译

人类因基所包含的信息如此之少以至于不能确定人类的 10" 神经中每一个细胞应占据哪个半脑，更不用说确定每个神经细胞之间的数百种连接了。

第五节　较长的形式主语、宾语如何破？

本节是第四节难度的晋升，较长的主语、宾语后置就是形式主语、宾语现象，因为太长的内容无法强调所以后置。托福阅读中后置的主语、宾语从句都会非常难。

典型例句分析

25

动词作主语　介词短语作补语　介词短语作定语修饰 evidence

It is necessary to supplement what little we do know with evidence from recent epidemics among Native Americans.

形式主语，真正的主语是 to supplement。　宾语从句，what 在从句中作宾语　*n.* 传染病；流行 *adj.* 流行的，普遍的

句子翻译

非常有必要把印第安人中最近该病的证据补充到我们知之甚少的信息中。

26

动词作主语　宾语从句　连词，这两个比喻是一种让步

It is safe to say that not a single law has been framed or one stone set upon another because of anything Chaucer said or wrote; and yet, as we read him, we are absorbing morality at every pore.

形式主语，真正的主语是 to say　省略 that 的定语从句修饰 anything　状语从句

介词短语作状语　连词　副词作状语，转折关系，话锋一转暗示乔叟的作品其实影响巨大

句子翻译

尽管可以很容易地说没有任何法律被形成也没有任何高楼大厦被建立，仅仅因为乔叟说了或写了什么，然而当我们阅读乔叟时，我们身上每一个毛孔都充满了道德感。

27

形式主语，真正的主语是 that 引导的主语从句

It is one of nature's great ironies that the availability of nitrogen in the soil frequently sets an upper limit on plant growth even though the plants' leaves are bathed in a sea of nitrogen gas.

状语从句　*n.* 反讽　主语从句　很生动的拟人描述

句子翻译

这是自然界巨大的反讽：尽管植物叶子沉浸在氮气的海洋中，但土壤中氮元素的可获得性却给植物生长设定了上限。

难句解析

irony 意为“反讽”，sarcasm 意为“讽刺”，必须通过例句理解两者的区别。

It is ironic that the robber's car crashed into a police station.

It is ironic that computers break down so often, since they are mean to save people time.

She made sarcastic comments that my singing reminded her of the time her dog was sick.

宾语从句。因为太长而后置，此用法已经成为习惯：Rumor has it that he is having an affair with his secretary。

动词作定语修饰 government train

28 Legend has it that sometime toward the end of the Civil War a government train carrying oxen traveling

形式宾语，真正的宾语是 that 引导的宾语从句

动词作定语修饰 government train

through the northern plains of eastern Wyoming was caught in a snowstorm and had to be abandoned.

was caught 和 had to be abandoned 谓语动词并列

句子翻译

传说在内战快结束的某个时候，一列载着牛群穿越东怀俄明州北部平原的政府列车被暴风雪困住，必须被遗弃。

第六节　多个名词结构并列如何破？

第六节难度继续提升，名词结构并列会导致句子很长，尤其是 and that 并列的名词从句。阅读水平高意味着不管并列结构多长，读到 and 仍能快速反应它和什么并列，且保证前面读到的内容不忘。就像水平高的服务员，一个客户需要餐巾纸，在去拿餐巾纸的路上他又被安排了很多事，可是始终没忘拿餐巾纸。

典型例句分析

29

副词作状语，therefore 插入在该位置是有意为之的，副词紧跟在动词之后强调因果关系。

Whether to use tests, other kinds of information, or both in a particular situation depends, therefore, upon the evidence from experience concerning comparative validity and upon such factors as cost and availability.

代词作主语

upon the evidence 和 upon such factors 并列。第二个 upon 不能省略，根据原则七，如果省略将会引起歧义，意味着 such factors 有可能和前面任意一个名词发生并列。

动词作定语修饰 experience

形容词作定语修饰 factors

句子翻译

是否采用测试或者其他种类的信息，抑或在某一特定情况下两者同时使用，取决于有关相对有效性的经验，还取决于诸如成本和可得到性等因素。

30

主语从句，how 在从句中作状语修饰 well

vt. 证实

How well the predictions will be validated by later performance depends upon the amount, reliability, and appropriateness of the information used and on the skill and wisdom with which it is interpreted.

副词作状语修饰 will be validated，意为“多么好地被证实”。

定语从句修饰 skill 和 wisdom。with which 是一个重要的难点，详细讲解请参见第四章第五节《关系代词前有介词的定语从句如何破？》。

动词作定语修饰 information

upon the amount, reliability, and appropriateness 和 on the skill and wisdom 并列。

代词指代 information

句子翻译

这些预言在多大程度上将被之后的表现所证实取决于使用信息的数量、可靠性和恰当性，还取决于解释这些信息的技巧和智慧。

名词作同位语解释 process　　根据原则五，process 和 one 同位语并列

31 Education is a lifelong process, a process that starts long before the start of school and one

定语从句修饰 one　　定语从句修饰 process　　代词指代 process

that should be an integral part of one's entire life.

句子翻译

教育是一个终生的过程，即一个从人们上学之前就开始的过程和一个应该成为人生中必备部分的过程。

形式主语，真正的主语是 that 引导的主语从句　　定语从句修饰 living things

32 It is significant that the earliest living things that built communities on these islands are examples

n. 共生　　主语从句　　定语从句修饰 phenomenon

of symbiosis, a phenomenon that depends upon the close cooperation of two or more forms of life

phenomenon 和 principle 同位语并列　　名词作同位语解释 symbiosis

and a principle that is very important in island communities.

定语从句修饰 principle

句子翻译

非常重要的是在这些岛上建立群落的最早的生物就是共生的例子，共生既是一种依赖两种或更多种生命形式密切配合的现象，也是一种岛上群落中非常重要的原则。

33 There are numerous unsubstantiated reports that natural vitamins are superior to synthetic ones,

并列的同位语从句解释 reports　　*adj.* 未经证实的　　同位语从句解释 reports

that fertilized eggs are nutritionally superior to unfertilized eggs, that untreated grains are better

vt. 熏蒸　　the like 是最后一个名词并列，形容词加 the 名词化，表示"还有其他类似的报道"。　　并列的同位语从句解释 reports

than fumigated grains and the like.

句子翻译

有大量未经证实的报道诸如天然维生素优于人造维生素，受精蛋比未受精蛋的营养价值更高，未经熏蒸消毒处理的谷物比经过处理的更好，以及其他类似的报道。

adj. 明显的 *vt.* 表明，证实　　形容词作补语　　*adj.* 迟钝的

34 It should be manifest to the dimmest executive that trust, that most valuable of economic

形式主语，真正的主语是两个 that 引导的主语从句　　主语从句

assets, is easily destroyed and hugely expensive to restore—and that few things are more

并列的主语从句。最后两句是多个名词从句并列，会导致主语或宾语部分非常长。

likely to destroy trust than a company letting sensitive personal data get into the wrong hands.

句子翻译

最愚钝的管理者也能明显意识到信任是最有价值的经济财产，它不仅容易失去而且需要高昂的代价恢复，这些管理者还能明显意识到几乎没有别的事情比让敏感的个人数据落到不该获得的人手里更加摧毁信任。

35

状语从句，根据原则九预判原则，预判重点是后面的主句　*n.* 岩层（stratum 的复数）

But as more and more accumulations of strata were cataloged in more and more places, it

副词作状语，这种以 but 开头的用法都是作状语，类似还有 however、nevertheless、nonetheless 等词。　形式主语，真正的主语是两个 that 引导的主语从句。

became clear that the sequences of rocks sometimes differed from region to region and that no

主语从句，预判后面的从句是完整的句子，所有 that 引导的名词从句 that 都是关系连词，在从句中不占任何成分。　并列的主语从句

rock type was ever going to become a reliable time marker throughout the world.

句子翻译

但是随着越来越多的岩层积累在更多地方被分类记录，两个事实变得很清晰：一是岩层序列因地区的不同而不同，二是全世界没有任何一种岩层种类会成为可靠的地质年代的标志。

第七节　百句练兵突破长名词结构（必杀句 1 ～ 27）

必杀句 1

难度系数 2.5

主语部分的核心词　　定语从句修饰 changes

The acute, growing public awareness of the social changes that had been taking place for

过去完成时不能单独出现，必须和过去时间有比较才能出现，这里主句是过去时，所以从句是过去的过去。从左到右阅读时需要在读到 had done 的同时预判后面的主句是过去时。

some time was tied to tremendous growth in popular journalism in the late nineteenth century,

介词短语作定语修饰 growth　　介词短语作状语

including growth in quantity and circulation of both magazines and newspapers.

介词短语作定语修饰 quantity 和 circulation

句子翻译

对一段时间内一直发生的社会变化的敏锐的、不断增强的公众意识与 19 世纪晚期大众通俗新闻的巨大增长紧密相连，这种巨大增长包括杂志和报纸在数量和发行量上的增长。

必杀句 2

难度系数 2.5

连词 and 的意义是标志多个名词结构并列的最后一项，这是预判原则的应用。

Other experiments revealed slight variations in the size, number, arrangement, and interconnection of

状语从句　　介词短语作定语修饰 variations　　介词短语作定语修饰前面所有并列的名词

the nerve cells, but as far as psycho neural correlations were concerned, the obvious similarities of these

并列连词，前后同等重要，缺一不可。although 之类的连词说明从句不重要，只有主句才重要。

sensory fields to each other seemed much more remarkable than any of the minute differences.

介词短语作定语修饰 fields　　预判后面有 than　　形容词作补语　　*adj.* 微小的

句子翻译

尽管其他实验显示神经细胞的大小、数量、排列和相互连接方面有一些细微的差异，但是考虑到心理神经的联系，这些感官区域彼此之间明显的相似性比微小的差异看起来更引人注目。

必杀句 3

难度系数 3.5

Open acknowledgement of the existence of women's oppression was too radical for the United

主语部分的核心

副词 too 修饰 radical，意为“太激进而不能”，暗含否定。

前面是完整的句子，根据原则五，可以预判出后面是同等重要的并列句。

Stated in the fifties, and Beauvoir's conclusion, that change in women's economic condition,

英语的引号一般表示引用原文，作者不便将他人的语句占为己有。引号中的内容和原文“无缝连接”，不是独立的部分，阅读时不要被引号打扰。

同位语从句解释 conclusion

介词短语作定语修饰 change

介词短语作状语

though insufficient by itself, “remains the basic factor” in improving women's situation, was

插入语是状语从句，本应该出现在最后，但提到主语旁边表示强调。试比较“这个改变虽然本身不是充分因素，但仍然是最基本的因素”和“这个改变仍然是最基本的因素，虽然它本身不是充分因素”，前者更有说服力。

particularly unacceptable.

形容词作补语

句子翻译

对 50 年代的美国而言，公开承认存在对女性的压迫过于激进，同时波伏娃的女性经济状况改变在提高女性地位方面“仍然是最基本的因素”这一结论（尽管观点本身不充分）尤其难以接受。

难句解析

1. 请注意 conclusion 后的逗号，英语的逗号不像中文的逗号表示断句，英语的逗号只表示阅读时的停顿，此处的逗号语法上是无所谓的，作者加上只是希望在这里停顿一下，表示阅读重心的转换。
2. 此句后半段要分清楚层次，第二个并列句主干是 conclusion was unacceptable，that 引导的同位语从句主干是 change remains the factor。而且此句后半段主谓相隔较远，类似句子中国学生感到非常不适应。可以把这种语感描述为“不管主语部分多长，就等着谓语动词出现，主语的同位语或定语结束的时候就是谓语动词出现的时候”，参见第三章原则二不仅要读出意思，还要读出结构。
3. 本书最大目的是培养一气呵成读完长结构的能力，突破方法是找到这样的句子专项集中训练，后文必杀句 6、7、8、9、11、15、17、20、21、25、26、27 均包含此特点。

必杀句 4

难度系数 3.5

作不及物动词时的含义是“来源于”，作及物动词的含义是“得出”。 动词作定语修饰 inability

Hardy's weakness derived from his apparent inability to control the comings and goings of

adj. 分开的，分歧的 from his inability 和 from unwillingness 并列，根据原则五，省略相同的谓语动词 derived。 动词作定语修饰 unwillingness

these divergent impulses and from his unwillingness to cultivate and sustain the energetic

理论上该处 and 可省，变为 derived from A and B。但实际上会产生歧义，因为 A 和 B 结构中名词成分较多，省略 and 后 unwillingness 将可能和前面任何一个名词并列。加上 from 就指明了和前面 from inability 并列。

and risky ones.

代词指代 impulses，请注意代词指代的单复数一致性

句子翻译

哈代的弱点一方面源于他无法控制那些发散冲动的穿梭往来，还源于他不愿意培养和维持那些富有活力和充满风险的冲动。

背景知识

托马斯·哈代（Thomas Hardy，1840–1928），英国诗人、小说家。早期和中期的创作以小说为主，继承和发扬了维多利亚时代的文学传统，晚年以其出色的诗歌开拓了英国 20 世纪的文学。代表作《德伯家的苔丝》《无名的裘德》。

必杀句 5

难度系数 5.0

介词短语作定语修饰 breakaway n. 异教

Islam, on the other hand, represented a radical breakaway from the Arab paganism that

v. 在……之前 代词指代 Islam 介词短语作状语 定语从句修饰 paganism

preceded it; Islamic law is the result of an examination, from a religious angle, of legal subject

定语从句修饰 matter 动词作状语，comprise 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是同时发生。 介词短语作定语修饰 examination

matter that was far from uniform, comprising as it did the various components of the laws of

状语从句，代词 it 指代 Islamic law，意为“正如它已经包含的那样”

pre-Islamic Arabia and numerous legal elements taken over from the non-Arab peoples of the

动词作定语修饰 elements 可数名词意为“民族”

conquered territories.

句子翻译

另一方面，伊斯兰教代表着与之前阿拉伯异教根本上的决裂；从宗教的角度讲，伊斯兰法是对各种绝对不统一的法律内容进行考察的结果，它包含两个内容：前伊斯兰阿拉伯国家法律的各种不同组成部分以及从被征服的土地上非阿拉伯民族借鉴过来的无数法律元素。

必杀句 6

难度系数 5.0

状语从句　介词短语作定语修饰 discrimination

His thesis works relatively well when applied to discrimination against Blacks in the United States, but

介词短语作定语修饰 prejudice

his definition of racial prejudice as "racially-based negative prejudgments against a group generally

这是一个名词结构，核心词是 prejudgments，其余全是前置或后置的定语，其中 in any given region 是介词短语作状语。

accepted as a race in any given region of ethnic competition," can be interpreted as also including

介词短语作定语修饰 hostility　动词名词化作补语

hostility toward such ethnic groups as the Chinese in California and the Jews in medieval Europe.

形容词作定语修饰 groups，类似于 ethnic groups such as

句子翻译

他的这篇论文相对来说更适用于针对美国黑人的歧视，但作者对种族偏见所下的定义，即"以种族为基础针对某个群体的负面的预判，该群体在任何给定的种族竞争地区被普遍认为一个是种族"，可以被理解为包括对加利福尼亚的中国人以及中世纪欧洲的犹太人这样的种族群体的敌对态度。

必杀句 7

难度系数 3.5

介词短语作定语修饰 variations　形容词名词化，意为"类似的一些东西"

Such variations in size, shape, chemistry, conduction speed, excitation threshold, and the like

定语从句修饰前面并列的所有名词　形容词作补语　介词短语作状语　介词短语作状语

as had been demonstrated in nerve cells remained negligible in significance for any possible

介词短语作定语修饰 correlation　学术的专业名词，不需要在含义上理解，只需要在结构上理解。

correlation with the manifold dimensions of mental experience.

句子翻译

这些在神经细胞中已经被证明的大小、形状、化学过程、产生速度、兴奋阈值以及类似的方面上产生的变化，在大脑的多维度经验可能的联系方面的重要性上，仍然是微不足道的。

必杀句 8

难度系数 4.0

定语从句修饰 relationships。这是“串联”的定语，每个定语修饰的都是最近的名词，串联同样会极大隔开主谓。详细讲解请参见第五章第二节《定语的并联和串联如何破？》。

The very richness and complexity of the meaningful relationships that kept presenting and

介词短语作定语修饰 richness 和 complexity　介词短语作状语，预判后面有 to

rearranging themselves on all levels, from abstract intelligence to profound dreamy feelings, made

形式宾语，真正的宾语是 to set　介词短语作状语　谓语 made 被主语 richness and complexity 的串联定语隔得很远

it difficult for Proust to set them out coherently.

介词短语作状语　动词作宾语　副词作状语

句子翻译

在所有层次上自我展现和自我排列的有意义联系的丰富性和复杂性，从抽象的知性到深刻的梦幻情感，使得普鲁斯特很难将它们连贯地安排好。

背景知识

马塞尔·普鲁斯特（Marcel Proust，1871–1922），20 世纪法国最伟大的小说家之一，意识流文学的先驱与大师。他出生于富裕家庭，自幼体质孱弱、生性敏感、富于幻想，中学时开始写诗，为报纸写专栏文章。代表作《追忆似水年华》。

必杀句 9

难度系数 4.5

A series of mechanical improvements continuing well into the nineteenth century, including the

动词作定语修饰 improvements　代词指代 tone

introduction of pedals to sustain tone or to soften it, the perfection of a metal frame and steel

形容词作后置定语修饰 instrument　介词短语作定语修饰 effects，预判后面有 to

wire of the finest quality, finally produced an instrument capable of myriad tonal effects from the

adj. 无数的，多种的　*adj.* 声调的

most delicate harmonies to an almost orchestral fullness of sound, from a liquid, singing tone to a

adj. 敲击的　非常抽象，很难精确地找到中文对应

sharp, percussive brilliance.

句子翻译

持续到 19 世纪的一系列机械上的改进，包括引入踏板以维持音调或使音调柔和，改善金属框架以及使用最佳性能的钢丝，最终产生了一种具备无数音调效果的乐器，这些效果涵盖了从最精致的和声到几乎全部的管弦乐声音，从流畅歌唱的音调到尖锐的打击乐器的鸣唱。

必杀句 10

难度系数 4.5

介词短语作定语修饰 evidence　*n.* 地幔　动词作定语修饰 fact，“被建立得很好的事实”就是“确定的事实”

The best evidence for the layered-mantle thesis is the well-established fact that volcanic rocks

动词作定语修饰 rocks　动词作定语修饰 islands　*n.* 地幔热柱　同位语从句解释 fact

found on oceanic island, islands believed to result from mantle plumes arising from the lower

名词作同位语解释 island　副词作状语修饰 different　动词作定语修饰 mantle plumes。以上串联的定语使得主语 rocks 和谓语动词 are composed of 相隔很远。

mantle, are composed of material fundamentally different from that of the mid-ocean ridge

定语从句修饰 system，whose 在从句中作定语，whose source 意为“……的来源”。　形容词作后置定语修饰 material　代词指代 material，比较结构必须对称，物质必须和物质比，不能和山脊系统比。

system, whose source, most geologists contend, is the upper mantle.

vt. 声称

句子翻译

对于地幔分层观点最好的证据是一个公认的事实，即海岛上发现的火山岩石（这些海岛被认为源于下层地幔升上来的地幔热柱）是由与海洋中部山脊系统完全不同的物质构成的，大多数地质学家主张海洋中部山脊系统的成因是上部地幔。

必杀句 11

难度系数 4.5

同位语从句解释 fact，从句谓语动词是 considered　*n.* 水藻　定语从句修饰 algae

Perhaps the fact that many of these first studies considered only algae of a size that could be

名词作同位语解释前面整个收集过程　*n.* 浮游植物　定语从句修饰 phytoplankton

collected in a net, a practice that overlooked the smaller phytoplankton that we now know grazers

定语从句修饰 practice　*adj.* 随后的　*n.* 食草动物

are most likely to feed on, led to a de-emphasis of the role of grazers in subsequent research.

句子翻译

可能这样一个事实，即很多这些最初的研究只考虑了那些能用网捞起来的大小的水藻，这是一种忽视了捕食者主要进食的更小浮游植物的做法，导致了随后的研究中对捕食者作用的贬低。

难句解析

此句主语 fact 的同位语极长，将主语和谓语隔开到极限，值得反复读熟，而且很容易被误认为定语从句。

必杀句 12

难度系数 3.5

New techniques for determining the molecular sequence of the RNA of organisms have

介词短语作定语修饰 techniques　　并列名词之一

produced evolutionary information about the degree to which organisms are related, the

定语从句修饰 degree，to which 在从句中作状语。详细讲解请参见第五章第五节《关系代词前有介词的定语从句如何破？》。

time since they diverged from a common ancestor, and the reconstruction of ancestral

并列名词之二　　*v.* 分开，分歧　　并列名词之三

versions of genes.

句子翻译

决定有机体 RNA 分子序列的新技术产生了进化方面的信息，这些信息有关有机体的相关程度，有关它们从共同的祖先那里分化出来的时间，同时有关祖先基因版本的重建。

必杀句 13

难度系数 3.5

状语从句。不要因为 although 引导的从句太长，忘了重要的是逗号后的主句，从句部分虽然长但是不重要。

Although qualitative variance among nerve energies was never rigidly disproved, the

介词短语作定语修饰 variance　　*adv.* 严厉地　　同位语从句解释 view

doctrine was generally abandoned in favor of the opposing view, namely, that nerve

介词短语作状语，意为“因为一个反对观点被抛弃”　　介词短语作状语

impulses are essentially homogeneous in quality and are transmitted as “common

adj. 同类的　　介词短语作状语　　are homogeneous 和 are transmitted 谓语动词并列

currency” throughout the nervous system.

介词短语作状语

句子翻译

尽管神经能量间性质的差别从没被严格地反对，但该原则还是被抛弃而转向相反的观点，即神经冲动本质上相同并且作为“普通流通”在整个神经系统中传播。

必杀句 14

难度系数 3.0

补语从句　破折号表示解释　介词短语作状语，这里介词的语感是“作为生活中塑造性的影响”，所以是状语。

My point is that its central consciousness—its profound understanding of class and gender as

字面的意思是“欠给了文学遗产”，也就是归功于文学遗产或者借鉴了文学遗产。　介词短语作定语修饰 understanding

shaping influences on people's lives—owes much to that earlier literary heritage, a heritage

adj. 同时代的；当代的　名词作同位语解释 heritage

that, in general, has not been sufficiently valued by most contemporary literary critics.

定语从句修饰 heritage，这个定语从句相当于“补充说明”，参见第五章第三节《关系从句如何破？》。

句子翻译

我的观点是它的中心意识——即对阶级和性别作为人们生活决定性影响的深刻理解——极大借鉴了早期文学遗产，这一遗产总体而言未获得当代大多数文学评论家的足够重视。

难句解析

owe…sth. to… 表达非常生动：Google owes much of its success to the brilliance of Larry Page and Sergey Brin, but also to a series of fortunate events.（谷歌公司的成功不仅归功于拉里·佩奇和谢尔盖·布林的智慧，还归功于一系列幸运的事件。）

必杀句 15

难度系数 3.0

动词作主语，附带宾语 matches，使得主语核心词 achieving 和谓语动词 requires 相隔很远

But achieving necessary matches in physical properties across interfaces between living and

副词作状语　介词短语作状语　介词短语作定语修饰 properties　介词短语作定语修饰 interfaces

nonliving matter requires knowledge of which molecules control the bonding of cells to each

介词短语作定语修饰 knowledge。此结构相当于第二章第六节练习 6 的 of what。　名词从句，of which 组成介词短语作定语修饰 knowledge。另一个重点是 which 在从句中作定语修饰 molecules，意为“哪一些分子”。

other—an area that we have not yet explored thoroughly.

名词作同位语解释前面的名词从句　定语从句修饰 area，that 在从句中作宾语，所以 that 可省略。

句子翻译

然而，穿越原生和非原生物质之间的界面的生理特性中达成必须的匹配需要一些知识，即哪些分子控制细胞彼此间的结合——这是一个我们尚未进行充分探索的领域。

必杀句 16

难度系数 3.5

因为前面没有任何单数的“它”，所以预判出这是形式主语。英语中不能在名词之前首先出现代词，否则就是指代不清。

If one begins by examining why ancients refer to Amazons, it becomes clear that ancient Greek

宾语从句，why 在从句中作状语　主语从句，that 在从句中不作成分，所以从句是完整的句子。

descriptions of such societies were meant not so much to represent observed historical fact—

so much 表示程度很大，加上 not 意为“完全不是”，同时预判后面有 but to。

real Amazonian societies—but rather to offer “moral lessons” on the supposed outcome of

破折号表示解释　副词作状语　动词作定语修饰 outcome，意为“本应出现的结果”

women’s rule in their own society.

句子翻译

如果我们首先研究一下为什么古人提及亚马逊人，接下来的问题就变得清晰了，即古希腊对于这种社会的描述完全不是用来表现真正的亚马逊社会这一观察到的历史事实，而是为了妇女在其社会中的规则的预期后果提供“道德教导”。

必杀句 17

难度系数 3.5

介词短语作定语修饰 interpretation。主语结构中包含较长的串联定语。

A critique of Handlin’s interpretation of why legal slavery did not appear until the 1660’s suggests

介词短语作定语修饰 assumptions　名词从句，why 在从句中作状语

that assumptions about the relation between slavery and racial prejudice should be reexamined,

宾语从句　介词短语作定语修饰 explanations　介词短语作定语修饰 relation

and that explanations for the different treatment of Black slaves in North and South America

并列的宾语从句，根据原则七，第一个 that 可省，第二个 that 不能省

should be expanded.

句子翻译

韩德琳对于为什么合法的奴隶制直到 17 世纪 60 年代才出现的原因做出了解释，一个对于该解释的批评显示，奴隶制和种族偏见之间关系的假设应当被重新审视，该批评还显示对北美和南美黑奴的不同处理的解释应当被扩展。

必杀句 18

难度系数 4.0

代词指代 upper mantle

The traditional view supposed that the upper mantle of the earth behaves as a liquid when it

宾语从句　并列的宾语从句　状语从句

is subjected to small forces for long periods and that differences in temperature under oceans

形容词作补语　动词作状语，produce 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是将来发生。

and continents are sufficient to produce convection in the mantle of the earth with rising

n. 对流　介词短语作状语

convection currents under the mid-ocean ridges and sinking currents under the continents.

rising currents 和 sinking currents 并列　省略现象，补全后是 sinking convection currents。

句子翻译

传统观点认为当地球的上层地幔长期受到小的压力的时候，其行为类似于液体，传统观点还认为海洋和大陆下面温度的不同足以产生地幔的对流，伴随中部海脊下面上升的对流和陆地下面下降的对流。

必杀句 19

难度系数 5.0

形式主语　介词短语作状语　动词作主语　宾语从句

Thus, for instance, it may come as a shock to mathematicians to learn that the Schrödinger

介词短语作定语修饰 equation　预判后面有 but　介词短语作定语修饰 description

equation for the hydrogen atom is not a literally correct description of this atom, but only an

介词短语作定语修饰 approximation　动词作定语修饰 equation

approximation to a somewhat more correct equation taking account of spin, magnetic dipole, and

adv. 稍微，有点　反身代词本来的位置是 this corrected equation itself is　介词短语作定语修饰 approximation

relativistic effects; and that this corrected equation is itself only an imperfect approximation to an

相隔很远的并列的宾语从句，此处 that 不能省。因为第一个宾语从句过长，作者为了避免混淆特意用了分号，以免读者读到 and that 时反应不过来。

infinite set of quantum field theoretical equations.

量子场理论方程

句子翻译

因此举个例子，数学家了解到这两件事情可能会震惊，一是解释氢原子的薛定谔方程并不是对该原子做出的一种绝对正确的描述，而只是一个考虑到自旋、磁性偶极子以及相对论效应的更正确方程的近似值；二是这个更正确的方程就其本身而言也只是对量子场理论方程无限集合的一个不完美近似。

背景知识

薛定谔方程（Schrödinger equation）是由奥地利物理学家薛定谔（1887–1961）提出的量子力学中的一个基本方程，也是量子力学的一个基本假定，其正确性只能靠实验来检验。薛定谔方程表明量子力学中粒子以概率的方式出现，具有不确定性。薛定谔是量子力学奠基人之一，因发展了原子理论，与狄拉克一起共获 1933 年诺贝尔物理学奖。

必杀句 20

难度系数 3.5

介词短语作状语，隔开了谓语 wrote 和宾语从句 that，属于简单的宾语后置，参见第八章第三节《宾语后置现象如何破？》。

宾语从句

定语从句修饰 discontent

The historian Frederick J. Turner wrote in the 1890's that the agrarian discontent that had been developing steadily in the United States since about 1870 had been precipitated by the closing of the internal frontier—that is, the depletion of available new land needed for further expansion of the American farming system.

从句谓语动词是过去完成进行时，因为主句谓语动词用的是 had been precipitated，过去完成时不能单独出现，一定要和过去时搭配出现，因为是时间的先后比较。

从句谓语动词是过去完成时，因为主句谓语动词用的是 wrote。“被向下扔”引申为“加剧，恶化”。

n. 耗尽

vt. 下掷

定语从句修饰 the closing of the internal frontier。破折号的加入是为了避免歧义，不然有可能理解为先行词是最近的名词 frontier。

名词作同位语解释 the closing of the internal frontier

动词作定语修饰 land

句子翻译

历史学家弗雷德里克 J. 特纳于 19 世纪 90 年代写道，美国 1879 年以来不断发展的农业的不满因内部边疆的关闭而加剧——即美国农业系统进一步扩张所必需的可利用土地的耗尽。

背景知识

弗雷德里克 J. 特纳（Frederick. J. Turner，1861—1932），生于美国威斯康星波特奇。特纳的大学生活在威斯康星大学度过，后转到约翰·霍普金斯大学攻读博士学位，之后返回母校威斯康星大学任教，从事边疆史学的教学和研究，之后受聘执教于哈佛。1893 年他写出了著名的《边疆在美国历史上的重要性》一文，提出了著名的“边疆假说”。该假说认为：“直到现在为止，一部美国史在很大程度上可说是对于大西部的拓殖史。一个自由土地区域的存在及其不断的收缩以及美国定居的向西推进，可以说明美国的发展。”

必杀句 21

难度系数 3.0

动词作定语修饰 arguments。定语较长，隔开了主语 arguments 和谓语 convinced。

Arguments pointing out the extent of both structural and functional differences between eukaryotes and true bacteria convinced many biologists that the precursors of the eukaryotes must have diverged from the common ancestor before the bacteria arose.

n. 真核细胞

补语从句，即名词从句作补语。因为是 that 引导，所以从句部分是完整的句子。

v. 分开，分歧

n. 前辈，前任

句子翻译

一些指出了真核细胞和真细菌之间的结构和功能上不同的程度的观点说服了很多生物学家这样一个事实，即真核细胞的祖先肯定是在细菌出现之前从其共同祖先那里分化出来的。

必杀句 22

难度系数 2.5

是主语 these recent historians 的前置同位语，表示强调。

Inheritors of some of the viewpoints of early twentieth-century progressive historians such as

是 progressive historians 的举例　　定语从句修饰 arguments

Beard and Becker, these recent historians have put forward arguments that deserve evaluation.

句子翻译

作为 20 世纪早期进步派历史学家如比尔得和贝克等人的某些观点的继承者，他们提出了一些值得评价的观点。

难句解析

此句不写成 Recent historians, inheritors…, have put forward… 的正常语序正是想强调理论继承者以及 Beard 和 Becker 等进步派历史学家，请体会这层语感。

必杀句 23

难度系数 2.5

宾语从句　　预判后面有 but

Many ecologists now think that the relative long-term stability of climax communities comes not from

逗号后本该有 that，此处是省略了 that 的同位语从句　　定语从句修饰 environment

diversity but from the "patchiness" of the environment, an environment that varies from place to place

预判后面有 than　　定语从句修饰 environment

supports more kinds of organisms than an environment that is uniform.

句子翻译

很多生态学家现在认为，顶极群落相对长期的稳定性不是因为物种多样性，而是因为环境的"补缀"，即各处不同的环境比各处一致的环境更有利于多种有机体的生存。

难句解析

此句比较特殊，省略 that 的同位语从句一般出现在非正式的文体中，例如：He gabbed his suitcase and gave the impression he was boarding the Tokyo plane.

必杀句 24

难度系数 4.0

副词的位置放在 on the basis 前面，形成反差　动词作定语修饰 observations，意为“对于地幔捕虏体的观察”。

Some geologists, however, on the basis of observations concerning mantle xenoliths, argue that

介词短语作状语。basis 表示抽象的基础，意为“在观察基础之上”。　*adj.* 地幔捕虏体　宾语从句

the mantle is not layered, but that heterogeneity is created by fluids rich in “incompatible elements”

预判后面有 but　名词从句，即看到 that 引导名词从句，预判后面是完整的句子　*n.* 异质性　形容词作后置定语修饰 fluids，参见第五章第一节《形容词作后置定语如何破？》

(elements tending toward liquid rather than solid state) percolating upward and transforming

名词作同位语解释 incompatible elements　*vi.* 渗透　动词作定语修饰 elements　并列的动词定语修饰 elements

portions of the upper mantle irregularly, according to the vagaries of the fluids' pathways.

独立成分作状语　*n.* 怪异多变

句子翻译

然而，一些地质学家根据对地幔捕虏体所做的观察指出，地幔并非分层排列，相反，地幔的异质性由富含“不相容成分”的流质构成，这些不相容成分趋向于流体而非固体状态，依照这些流质流向的多变性，自下而上渗透并不规则地将上部地幔的某些部分改变。

难句解析

1. 有研究者把 concerning、regarding 这样的词定义为边缘介词（marginal preposition），即具有介词词性，与名词一起组成介词短语作定语。
2. 此句中括号内是插入语，不用逗号一是因为 elements 的定语确实太多，二是因为括号比逗号更加独立于原文，对整个句意的影响更小。笔者建议前后括号的插入语可以迅速跳过，因为可以迅速辨别，而前后逗号的插入语仍旧去读，熟练以后不需太多时间。

必杀句 25

难度系数 3.5

However, recent scholarship has strongly suggested that those aspects of early New England

定语从句修饰 culture　动词作补语　*adj.* 清教徒的；严格的　宾语从句

culture that seem to have been most distinctly Puritan, such as the strong religious orientation

n. 公社式冲动　预判后面有 but　were not typical 和 were confined to 并列

and the communal impulse, were not even typical of New England as a whole, but were largely

宾语从句的主语 aspects 和谓语 were 相隔很远。读到主语的核心 aspects 的时候也要预判谓语动词是复数形式，等着它出现，不要等读到 were 才想到主语是 aspects。

confined to the two colonies of Massachusetts and Connecticut.

句子翻译

然而，最近的学术研究强烈显示那些早期的新英格兰文化呈现出的明显的清教特征，例如强烈的宗教导向和公社式冲动，甚至不是新英格兰地区整体的典型特征，而只是局限于马赛诸塞和康涅狄格两个州的。

背景知识

新英格兰地区位于美国东北角，濒临大西洋，毗邻加拿大。包括美国建国时 13 个州中的六个州，由北至南分别为：缅因州、佛蒙特州、新罕布什尔州、马赛诸塞州，罗得岛州、康涅狄格州。马赛诸塞州首府波士顿是该地区的最大城市以及经济与文化中心。新英格兰地区拥有全美国乃至全世界最好的教育环境。

必杀句 26

难度系数 4.5

副词作状语

主语从句，该从句的主干是 what appears to be Southern。

介词短语作状语

副词作状语修饰 Southern，意为“独特的，特殊的”。

Thus, what in contrast to the Puritan colonies appears to Davis to be peculiarly Southern—

介词短语作状语

acquisitiveness，a strong interest 和 a tendency 三个名词结构并列

acquisitiveness, a strong interest in politics and the law, and a tendency to cultivate metropolitan

破折号后的三个名词结构解释主语从句

预判后面有 than

动词作定语修饰 tendency

adj. 大城市的

cultural models—was not only more typically English than the cultural patterns exhibited by

同必杀句 25，读到主语从句就要预判谓语动词是单数

预判后面有 but also

动词作定语修饰 patterns

Puritan Massachusetts and Connecticut, but also almost certainly characteristic of most other early modern British colonies from Barbados north to Rhode Island and New Hampshire.

句子翻译

因此，与清教殖民地形成鲜明对比的那些对戴维斯来说特殊的南方特征——占有欲，对政治和法律的强烈兴趣以及培养都市文化模式的倾向——不仅比清教的马赛诸塞州和康涅狄格州所展现出来的文化模式更具典型英国色彩，而且几乎毫无疑问地构成了其他绝大部分近代早期英国殖民地的特征，从巴巴多斯北部到罗德岛州和新罕布什尔州。

必杀句 27

难度系数 4.5

The increase in the numbers of married women employed outside the home in the twentieth

预判后面有 than

动词作定语修饰 women

century had less to do with the mechanization of housework and an increase in leisure time

独立的成分，it 指代 increase，意为“这个增长已经和这些有关了”。

for these women than it did with their own economic necessity and with high marriage rates

with their own economic necessity 和 with high marriage rates 并列

that shrank the available pool of single women workers, previously, in many cases, the only

定语从句修饰 rates。这个定语从句称为关系从句，详细讲解请参见第五章第三节《关系从句如何破？》。

women employers would hire.

名词作同位语解释 single women workers

句子翻译

20 世纪在家庭以外就业的已婚女性数量的上升与家务自动化和女性闲暇时间增多无关，而与女性自身经济需求和高结婚率有关，在之前很多情况中，该高结婚率缩减了雇主们愿意雇用的唯一女性群体——单身女性员工的数量。

第八节 百句精练

典型例句

S$_1$ A century ago, Freud formulated his revolutionary theory that dreams were the disguised shadows of our unconscious desire and fears.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_2$ In the railroads' prime years, between 1890 and 1920, there were a few individuals in the United States, most of whom with solid railroading experience behind them, who made a profession of writing about railroading — works offering the ambience of stations, yards, and locomotive cabs.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_3$ Talking about novels and stories primarily as instruments of ideology circumvents much of the fictional enterprise.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_4$ To take this approach to the New Englanders normally means to start with the Puritans' theological innovations and their distinctive ideas about the church–important subjects that we may not neglect.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_5$ In the seventeenth century the organ, the clavichord, and the harpsichord became the chief instruments of the keyboard group, a supremacy they maintained until the piano supplanted them at the end of the eighteenth century.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_6$ A detailed study has been made of the prints using photogrammetry, a technique for obtaining measurements through photographs, which created a drawing showing all the curves and contours of the prints.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_7$ Television—the most pervasive and persuasive of modern technologies, marked by rapid change and growth, is moving into a new era, an era of extraordinary sophistication and versatility, which promises to reshape our lives and our world.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_8 Satire has lived because readers appreciate a refreshing stimulus, an irreverent reminder that they lived in a world of platitudinous thinking, cheap moralizing, and foolish philosophy.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_9 Keen observers and quick learners, crows are astute about the intentions of other creatures, including researchers, and adept at avoiding them.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{10} The argument that humans, even in prehistoric times, had some number sense, at least to the extent of recognizing the concepts of more and less when some objects were added to or taken away from a small group, seems fair, for studies have shown that some animals possess such a sense.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{11} The primary reason was skepticism that a railroad built through so challenging and thinly settled a stretch of desert, mountain, and semiarid plain could pay a profit.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{12} The hypothesis received additional support form from the fact that the greatest diversity in native American languages occurs along the west coast of the Americans, suggesting that this region has been settled the longest.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{13} The fact that half of the known species are thought to inhabit the world's rain forests does not seem surprising, considering the huge numbers of insects that comprise the bulk of the species.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{14} But the idea that the journalist must understand the law more profoundly than an ordinary citizen rests on an understanding of the established conventions and special responsibilities of the news media.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{15} As a result, claims that eating a diet consisting entirely of organically grown foods prevents or cures disease or provides other benefits to health have become widely publicized and form the basis for folklore.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{16} Although leaders are often thought to be people with unusual personal ability, decades of research have failed to produce consistent evidence that there is any category of "natural leaders".

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{17} In fact, throughout the animal kingdom, from sponges to certain types of worms, shellfish, and all vertebrates(creatures possessing a spinal column), there is evidence that transplants of cells or fragments of tissues into an animal are accepted only if they come from genetically compatible or closely related individuals.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{18} There was a belief that the new nations should be sovereign and independent states, large enough to be economically viable and integrated by a particular set of laws.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{19} Mores, which embodied each culture's ideal principles for governing every citizen, were developed in the belief that the foundation of a community lies in the cultivation of individual powers to be placed in service to the community.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{20} Amid rumors that there were prehistoric mammoths wandering around the unknown region and that somewhere in its wilds was a mountain of rock salt 80 by 45 miles in extent, the two captains set out.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{21} How critical this eye maneuvering is to the maintenance of conversational flow becomes manifest when two speakers are wearing dark glasses.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{22} There were factories in occupations such as metalwork where individual contractors presided over what were essentially handicraft proprietorships that coexisted within a single building.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{23} The variation between the hemispheres corresponds to which side of the body is used to perform specific activities.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{24} Human genes contain too little information even to specify which hemisphere of the brain each of a human's 10" neurons should occupy, let alone the hundreds of connections that each neuron makes.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{25} It is necessary to supplement what little we do know with evidence from recent epidemics among Native Americans.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{26} It is safe to say that not a single law has been framed or one stone set upon another because of anything Chaucer said or wrote; and yet, as we read him, we are absorbing morality at every pore.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{27} It is one of nature's great ironies that the availability of nitrogen in the soil frequently sets an upper limit on plant growth even though the plants' leaves are bathed in a sea of nitrogen gas.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{28} Legend has it that sometime toward the end of the Civil War a government train carrying oxen traveling through the northern plains of eastern Wyoming was caught in a snowstorm and had to be abandoned.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{29} Whether to use tests, other kinds of information, or both in a particular situation depends, therefore, upon the evidence from experience concerning comparative validity and upon such factors as cost and availability.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{30} How well the predictions will be validated by later performance depends upon the amount, reliability, and appropriateness of the information used and on the skill and wisdom with which it is interpreted.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{31} Education is a lifelong process, a process that starts long before the start of school and one that should be an integral part of one's entire life.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{32} It is significant that the earliest living things that built communities on these islands are examples of symbiosis, a phenomenon that depends upon the close cooperation of two or more forms of life and a principle that is very important in island communities.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{33} There are numerous unsubstantiated reports that natural vitamins are superior to synthetic ones, that fertilized eggs are nutritionally superior to unfertilized eggs, that untreated grains are better than fumigated grains and the like.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{34} It should be manifest to the dimmest executive that trust, that most valuable of economic assets, is easily destroyed and hugely expensive to restore—and that few things are more likely to destroy trust than a company letting sensitive personal data get into the wrong hands.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{35} But as more and more accumulations of strata were cataloged in more and more places, it became clear that the sequences of rocks sometimes differed from region to region and that no rock type was ever going to become a reliable time marker throughout the world.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

必杀句 1 ～ 27

S_1 The acute, growing public awareness of the social changes that had been taking place for some time was tied to tremendous growth in popular journalism in the late nineteenth century, including growth in quantity and circulation of both magazines and newspapers.

精读遍数： ❑

S_2 Other experiments revealed slight variations in the size, number, arrangement, and interconnection of the nerve cells, but as far as psycho neural correlations were concerned, the obvious similarities of these sensory fields to each other seemed much more remarkable than any of the minute differences.

精读遍数： ❑

S_3 Open acknowledgement of the existence of women's oppression was too radical for the United Stated in the fifties, and Beauvoir's conclusion, that change in women's economic condition, though insufficient by itself, "remains the basic factor" in improving women's situation, was particularly unacceptable.

精读遍数： ❑

S_4 Hardy's weakness derived from his apparent inability to control the comings and goings of these divergent impulses and from his unwillingness to cultivate and sustain the energetic and risky ones.

精读遍数： ❑

S_5 Islam, on the other hand, represented a radical breakaway from the Arab paganism that preceded it; Islamic law is the result of an examination, from a religious angle, of legal subject matter that was far from uniform, comprising as it did the various components of the laws of pre–Islamic Arabia and numerous legal elements taken over from the non–Arab peoples of the conquered territories.

精读遍数： ❑

S_6 His thesis works relatively well when applied to discrimination against Blacks in the United States, but his definition of racial prejudice as "racially–based negative prejudgments against a group generally accepted as a race in any given region of ethnic competition," can be interpreted as also including hostility toward such ethnic groups as the Chinese in California and the Jews in medieval Europe.

精读遍数： ❑

S_7 Such variations in size, shape, chemistry, conduction speed, excitation threshold, and the like as had been demonstrated in nerve cells remained negligible in significance for any possible correlation with the manifold dimensions of mental experience.

精读遍数： ❑

S_8 The very richness and complexity of the meaningful relationships that kept presenting and rearranging themselves on all levels, from abstract intelligence to profound dreamy feelings, made it difficult for Proust to set them out coherently.

精读遍数： ❑

S_9 A series of mechanical improvements continuing well into the nineteenth century, including the introduction of pedals to sustain tone or to soften it, the perfection of a metal frame and steel wire of the finest quality, finally produced an instrument capable of myriad tonal effects from the most delicate harmonies to an almost orchestral fullness of sound, from a liquid, singing tone to a sharp, percussive brilliance.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{10} The best evidence for the layered–mantle thesis is the well–established fact that volcanic rocks found on oceanic island, islands believed to result from mantle plumes arising from the lower mantle, are composed of material fundamentally different from that of the mid–ocean ridge system, whose source, most geologists contend, is the upper mantle.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{11} Perhaps the fact that many of these first studies considered only algae of a size that could be collected in a net, a practice that overlooked the smaller phytoplankton that we now know grazers are most likely to feed on, led to a de–emphasis of the role of grazers in subsequent research.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{12} New techniques for determining the molecular sequence of the RNA of organisms have produced evolutionary information about the degree to which organisms are related, the time since they diverged from a common ancestor, and the reconstruction of ancestral versions of genes.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{13} Although qualitative variance among nerve energies was never rigidly disproved, the doctrine was generally abandoned in favor of the opposing view, namely, that nerve impulses are essentially homogeneous in quality and are transmitted as “common currency” throughout the nervous system.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{14} My point is that its central consciousness—its profound understanding of class and gender as shaping influences on people’s lives—owes much to that earlier literary heritage, a heritage that, in general, has not been sufficiently valued by most contemporary literary critics.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{15} But achieving necessary matches in physical properties across interfaces between living and nonliving matter requires knowledge of which molecules control the bonding of cells to each other—an area that we have not yet explored thoroughly.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{16} If one begins by examining why ancients refer to Amazons, it becomes clear that ancient Greek descriptions of such societies were meant not so much to represent observed historical fact — real Amazonian societies — but rather to offer "moral lessons" on the supposed outcome of women's rule in their own society.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{17} A critique of Handlin's interpretation of why legal slavery did not appear until the 1660's suggests that assumptions about the relation between slavery and racial prejudice should be reexamined, and that explanations for the different treatment of Black slaves in North and South America should be expanded.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{18} The traditional view supposed that the upper mantle of the earth behaves as a liquid when it is subjected to small forces for long periods and that differences in temperature under oceans and continents are sufficient to produce convection in the mantle of the earth with rising convection currents under the mid–ocean ridges and sinking currents under the continents.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{19} Thus, for instance, it may come as a shock to mathematicians to learn that the Schrödinger equation for the hydrogen atom is not a literally correct description of this atom, but only an approximation to a somewhat more correct equation taking account of spin, magnetic dipole, and relativistic effects; and that this corrected equation is itself only an imperfect approximation to an infinite set of quantum field theoretical equations.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{20} The historian Frederick J. Turner wrote in the 1890's that the agrarian discontent that had been developing steadily in the United States since about 1870 had been precipitated by the closing of the internal frontier — that is, the depletion of available new land needed for further expansion of the American farming system.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{21} Arguments pointing out the extent of both structural and functional differences between eukaryotes and true bacteria convinced many biologists that the precursors of the eukaryotes must have diverged from the common ancestor before the bacteria arose.

精读遍数： ❑

S22 Inheritors of some of the viewpoints of early twentieth-century progressive historians such as Beard and Becker, these recent historians have put forward arguments that deserve evaluation.

精读遍数： ❑

S23 Many ecologists now think that the relative long-term stability of climax communities comes not from diversity but from the "patchiness" of the environment, an environment that varies from place to place supports more kinds of organisms than an environment that is uniform.

精读遍数： ❑

S24 Some geologists, however, on the basis of observations concerning mantle xenoliths, argue that the mantle is not layered, but that heterogeneity is created by fluids rich in "incompatible elements"(elements tending toward liquid rather than solid state) percolating upward and transforming portions of the upper mantle irregularly, according to the vagaries of the fluids' pathways.

精读遍数： ❑

S25 However, recent scholarship has strongly suggested that those aspects of early New England culture that seem to have been most distinctly Puritan, such as the strong religious orientation and the communal impulse, were not even typical of New England as a whole, but were largely confined to the two colonies of Massachusetts and Connecticut.

精读遍数： ❑

S26 Thus, what in contrast to the Puritan colonies appears to Davis to be peculiarly Southern —acquisitiveness, a strong interest in politics and the law, and a tendency to cultivate metropolitan cultural models — was not only more typically English than the cultural patterns exhibited by Puritan Massachusetts and Connecticut, but also almost certainly characteristic of most other early modern British colonies from Barbados north to Rhode Island and New Hampshire.

精读遍数： ❑

S27 The increase in the numbers of married women employed outside the home in the twentieth century had less to do with the mechanization of housework and an increase in leisure time for these women than it did with their own economic necessity and with high marriage rates that shrank the available pool of single women workers, previously, in many cases, the only women employers would hire.

精读遍数： ❑

第五章

倍道而进——长定语如何不觉得长

第一节　形容词作后置定语如何破?

中国人太习惯于 a beautiful girl、a wonderful view 这种类似于中文的前置形容词表达，导致对形容词作后置定语很不习惯。其实英语的定语大多数都是后置的，比如 She is a girl beautiful，更不用说加长的定语 She is a girl beautiful in the eye。

典型例句分析

1 An impact (on the Mars) capable of ejecting a fragment of the Martian surface into an Earth–intersecting orbit is even less probable than such an event on the Moon, in view of the Moon's smaller size and closer proximity to Earth.

形容词作后置定语修饰 impact

预判后面有 than

n. 接近

句子翻译

一个能把火星表面的碎片送入地球交叉轨道的碰撞甚至比在月球上发生类似事情的可能性要小，考虑到月亮更小的尺寸和与地球更为接近。

2 During the 1940's electron microscopes routinely achieved resolution better than that possible with a visible light microscope, while the performance of x–ray microscopes resisted improvement.

n. 分辨率

代词指代 resolution

形容词作后置定语修饰 that

状语从句

句子翻译

二十世纪四十年代，电子显微镜通常达到了比可见光显微镜更高的分辨率，而 X 光显微镜的表现却没有任何改进。

第二节　定语的并联和串联如何破？

前文必杀句 8、10、17 提到定语的并联和串联，并联就是多个定语并列修饰同一个先行词；串联就是一个定语嵌套另一个定语。并联或串联必然导致定语很长，如果作为后置定语修饰主语，会极大隔开主谓。对长定语后置感到不习惯的问题读完本书后会迎刃而解。

典型例句分析

3

介词短语作补语　*n.* 努力，尽力　定语从句修饰 endeavor

Present-day philosophers usually envision their discipline as an endeavor that has been, since

介词短语作状语

antiquity, distinct from and superior to any particular intellectual discipline such as theology or

形容词作补语　并列的形容词作补语

science.

句子翻译

当今的哲学家常常将他们的学科视为从古至今不同于并高于其他诸如神学或科学等知识学科的一个追求。

4

动词作定语修饰 decision

Kodak's decision to file for bankruptcy protection is a sad, though not unexpected, turning point

介词短语作状语

for a leading American corporation that pioneered consumer photography and dominated the

定语从句修饰 corporation，定语从句部分 pioneered、dominated、failed 三个谓语动词并列。

film market for decades, but ultimately failed to adapt to the digital revolution.

前面两层定语用 and 连接是因为都是正面的定语，最后一层是负面的定语，所以用 but 连接。

句子翻译

虽然在预料中，但是柯达公司申请破产保护的决定对于一个曾经行业领先的美国公司来说是一个悲哀的转折点，这个美国公司开创了消费摄影业并统治胶片市场长达几十年但最终被数字革命完败。

动词作定语修饰 survey　　宾语从句

5 A survey conducted in Britain confirmed that an abnormally high percentage of patients suffering

宾语从句谓语动词　　动词作定语修饰 patients

from arthritis of the spine who had been treated with X-rays contracted cancer.

n. 关节炎　　定语从句修饰 patients　　*vt.* 患病

句子翻译

英国的一项调查证实了接受 X 光治疗的脊椎关节炎患者不正常的高比例罹患癌症。

宾语从句　　定语从句修饰 child　　定语从句修饰 environment，where 在从句中作状语

6 Behaviorists suggest that the child who is raised in an environment where there are many stimuli

which develop his or her capacity for appropriate response will experience greater intellectual

定语从句修饰 stimuli　　介词短语作定语修饰 capacity　　宾语从句谓语动词

development.

句子翻译

行为学家指出，一个在有很多刺激的环境里长大的儿童将会获得更大的智力发展，这些刺激帮助他或她发展适当的反应能力。

难句解析

视译（边看文稿边翻译）此句非常难，因为此句是本书最长的两个串联定语之一，另一个参见必杀句 45。

第三节　关系从句如何破？

按照传统，所有定语从句中文都要前置翻译成“……的”，但以下例句行不通。

The hijacker gave himself up to police, who are now questioning him.

应该翻译为：劫匪向警方自首了，警方现在正在审讯他。

不能翻译为：劫匪向现在正在审讯他的警方自首了。

Kennedy was rushed to a hospital where he died immediately.

应该翻译为：肯尼迪被急忙送到一家医院，在那他很快就死了。

不能翻译为：肯尼迪被急忙送到一家他很快就死的医院。

When he was still a little boy, Jack London wrote some compositions which were praised by his teachers.

应该翻译为：当杰克伦敦还是个小孩时，他写的作文就受到老师的赞扬。

不能翻译为：当杰克伦敦还是个小孩时，他就写一些受到老师赞扬的作文。

The snake catches the toad that eats the insect that nibbles the green leaves that grow on the branches.

应该翻译为：蛇吃癞蛤蟆，癞蛤蟆吃虫子，虫子吃绿叶子，绿叶子长在树枝上。

或者：蛇吃癞蛤蟆，癞蛤蟆吃虫子，虫子吃长在树枝上的绿叶子。

不能翻译为：蛇吃吃吃长在树枝上的绿叶子的虫子的癞蛤蟆。

以上例句都是因为主句动作先于从句动作发生，“先自首再审讯”，“先写文章再受到赞扬”，按照英语后置定语写出来很自然，但按照中文前置定语写就很奇怪。这是因为汉语缺乏关系代词、关系连词等连接词汇，通常有以时间或逻辑为轴线安排句子，对语序依赖性极大。

这些广义的定语从句称为“关系从句”，所谓“关系”就是从句和先行词有关系，这个“关系”就是补充说明，或者称为“狗尾续貂”，在主句已经说完的情况下再补充说明最后的名词。这种“正名”有利于我们摆脱“定语”的束缚，翻译时必须采取重复先行词的方法，所以不叫“限定”而称为“关系”，请体会以下关系从句的补充说明作用。

典型例句分析

介词短语作状语，括号表示的插入语更加独立

The elastic characteristics encountered (by seismic waves) generally change abruptly, which causes part of the energy to be reflected back to the surface, where it is recorded by seismic instruments.

定语从句修饰整个主句，which 在从句中作主语。该定语从句无法前置翻译成“……的”，只是补充说明。

定语从句修饰 surface，where 在从句中作状语。
定语从句 which 的先行词是整个句子，where 的先行词是 surface。

句子翻译

与震波相遇的弹性性质大体上会突然改变，使得一部分能量被反射回地面，在地面被震波仪器记录下来。

8 In agriculture, the transformation was marked by the emergence of the grain elevators, the cotton presses, the warehouses, and the commodity exchanges that seemed to so many of the nation's farmers the visible sign of a vast conspiracy against them.

介词短语作状语
介词短语作补语
定语从句修饰前面并列的所有名词。同理，只能用重复先行词的办法翻译。
介词短语作状语，提前表示强调
为了强调状语所以名词作补语后置
介词短语作定语修饰 sign
介词短语作定语修饰 conspiracy

句子翻译

在农业上，这一变化的标志是谷物升降机、皮棉打包机厂、仓库和商品交换的出现，它们对全国众多的农民来说明显标志着对他们不利的巨大阴谋。

9 We are treated to fine hypocritical spectacles, which now more than ever seem in ample supply: the critic of American materialism with a Southampton summer home; the publisher of radical books who takes his meals in three-star restaurants; the journalist advocating participatory democracy in all phases of life, whose own children are enrolled in private schools.

很生动的表达
adj. 虚伪的
n. 景象
定语从句修饰 spectacles
n. 参与民主制

句子翻译

我们被这样一场精美而虚伪的视觉盛宴所款待，这场盛宴似乎比以前任何时候都丰盛：批评美国物质享乐主义的批评家在南安普顿拥有一栋避暑别墅；激进书籍的出版商在三星级饭店就餐；终生支持参与民主制的记者让自己的孩子去私立学校上学。

10 He set up experiments with caged starlings and found that their orientation was, in fact, in the proper migratory direction except when the sky was overcast, at which times there was no clear direction to their restless movements.

介词短语作定语修饰 experiments
n. 八哥
宾语从句
介词短语作状语
set up 和 found 谓语动词并列
介词短语作补语，因为前面谓语动词是 be 动词，该结构类似于 He is at home。
名词从句，when 在从句中作状语
adj. 阴天的
介词短语作状语
定语从句修饰 when the sky was overcast，which 在从句中作定语修饰 times。

句子翻译

他设计了笼中八哥的实验，发现事实上除了天空阴霾的时候它们都有正确的迁徙方向，在阴霾天它

们骚动不安没有任何清楚的方向感。

难句解析

at which times 是完完全全的关系从句，必须通过重复先行词翻译。再比如：

He lost his temper, at which point I decided to go home.

The questions were all on opera, about which subject I know nothing.

多个名词结构并列，and 标志着多个名词结构的最后一项

11 Kindergartens, vacation schools, extracurricular activities, and vocational education and counseling extended the influence of public schools over the lives of students, many of whom in the larger industrial cities were the children of immigrants.

vocational education 和 vocational counseling 并列

介词短语作状语

定语从句修饰 students，是典型的关系从句。

句子翻译

幼儿园、假期学校、课外活动、职业教育和职业咨询将公立学校的影响扩大到学生的生活中，其中很多学生都是更大工业城市中移民的后代。

第四节 “4W1H”引导的定语从句如何破？

where，when，why，how 是关系副词，按照中文里重复先行词的语感它们对应“在……中”、“当……时”、“因为……原因”等等，即前面提到的“在从句中作状语”。比如 I went to a restaurant where I met my old friend. 中文译为“我去了一家餐厅，在那我遇上了我的老朋友”，很明显“在那”是从句的状语。

whose 最重要的是它在从句中表示所属关系，紧接名词，意为“……的”。比如 I went to a restaurant whose boss is my old friend，很明显 whose 的语感是“餐厅的老板”。还有一点必须说明，whose 的先行词不一定是人，物也可以。

12 As a result of crustal adjustments and faulting, the Strait of Gibraltar, where the Mediterranean now connects to the Atlantic, opened, and water cascaded spectacularly back into the Mediterranean.

介词短语作状语

定语从句修饰 the Strait of Gibraltar，where 在从句中作状语。不要被该插入语打扰，时刻铭记 Strait 的谓语还没出现。

adj. 地壳的

n. 断层作用

阅读时遇到专有名词需要养成拼读发音的习惯，如果置之不理会影响阅读速度和语感。

并列句，前后同等重要

句子翻译

作为地壳调整和断层作用的结果，现在连接地中海和大西洋的直布罗陀海峡打开了，水流像瀑布一样壮观地涌回地中海。

13 As among tribes people, personal relationships and a careful weighing of character have always been crucial in a mercantile economy with little regulation, where one's word is one's bond and where informal ties of trust cement together an international trade network.

形容词作补语

adj. 商业的

定语从句修饰 economy，where 在从句中作状语。

介词短语作状语

介词短语作定语修饰 economy

并列的定语从句修饰 economy

vt. 巩固，加固

句子翻译

正如在部落成员之间，人际关系和谨慎品质在监管不严的商品经济中至关重要，在这个经济里人们出口成契，诚信的非正式联系形成了国际贸易网络。

n. 粒子；微粒

定语从句修饰 real particles，作为补充说明，意为“实际粒子的……”。关系代词指代的先行词一般是最近的名词，即就近原则。

14 They are called virtual particles in order to distinguish them from real particles, whose lifetimes are not constrained in the same way, and which can be detected.

动词作状语，distinguish 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是将来发生，介词短语 in order 更加强调“为了”的含义。

并列的定语从句修饰 real particles

句子翻译

为了与实际粒子区分开，它们被称为“虚拟粒子”，实际粒子的生命周期不会以相同的方式被制约，同时实际粒子可以被监测。

定语从句修饰 substances

15 Over long periods of time, substances whose physical and chemical properties change with the ambient climate at the time can be deposited in a systematic way to provide a continuous record of changes in those properties overtime, sometimes for hundreds or thousands of years.

介词短语作状语

adj. 周围的，环境的

动词作状语，provide 和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是将来发生。

介词短语作状语

介词短语作状语

句子翻译

经过很长一段时间，物质的物理和化学特征会随着周围环境的气候变化而变化，这些物质将会以系统的方式沉淀，从而连续记录更长时间内那些性质的变化，有时长达成百上千年。

第五节　关系代词前有介词的定语从句如何破?

in which、at which、from which、with which 之类的用法等同于 where、when 等关系副词，但更为正式。例如美国公务员就职宣誓词：

I will well and faithfully discharge the duties of the office upon which I am about to enter.

再看典型例句：

Some manufacturers stipulate the price at which their goods are to be sold.

一些生产商规定他们的产品应该销售的价格。

传统的讲解是按照 their goods are to be sold at the price 的语序理解从句，介词 at 提前形成了 at which。笔者认为这违背了从左到右的阅读法则，从后往前推就是“做事后诸葛亮”，口语中更不可能先听后面再理解前面。就像有老师说插入语可以不读，其实是读完了才说可以不读的，这么做没有意义。

正确的理解是把 at which 看成一个整体，at which 在从句中作状语，意为“在这个价格下，产品被销售”，类似于对 where，when 的理解，这样符合“阅读顺序”原则。

典型例句分析

定语从句修饰 degree，to which 在从句中作状语。

16 Moreover, the degree to which cones are naturally slightly open or tightly closed helps determine which bill design is the best.

n. 喙，鸟嘴

动词作宾语，省略 to 的不定式，原本是 to determine

宾语从句，which 在从句中作定语，参见第四章第四节《较长的主语、宾语从句如何破？》。

句子翻译

而且，球果天然地轻微开口程度或紧闭程度有助于确定哪种喙的设计是最好的。

定语从句修饰 uses，to which 在从句中作状语。

定语从句修饰 anthropologists

17 The different uses to which societies put these materials are of interest to anthropologists who may ask, for example, why a people chooses to use clay and not copper when both items are available.

可数名词意为“民族”

介词短语作补语，相当于 are interesting

n. 人类学家

宾语从句，why 在从句中作状语

动词作宾语

clay 和 copper 并列

状语从句

句子翻译

各个社会对这些材料的不同用途是人类学家所感兴趣的，例如，这些人类学家或许会问，当黏土和铜都能够得到时，为什么一个民族会选择用前者而不是后者。

介词短语作定语修饰 data　　定语从句修饰 data，from which 在从句中作状语。

18 Now, scientists have data from satellites and ground-based observations from which we

宾语从句　　代词指代 discharge，比较结构必须对称，电流释放必须和电流释放比，不能和霓虹灯比。

know that the auroral brilliance is an immense electrical discharge similar to that occurring

n. 极光的　　形容词作后置定语修饰 discharge　　动词作定语修饰 that

in a neon sign.

句子翻译

如今，科学家们拥有来自卫星和陆地基站的数据，从中我们得知极光是一种大规模的电流释放，这种释放类似于霓虹灯的发光原理。

19 In taking up a new life across the Atlantic, the early European settlers of the United States did not

介词短语作状语　　过去完成时，因为主语是一般过去时，过去完成时必须出现与过去的比较。

abandon the diversions with which their ancestors had traditionally relieved the tedium of life.

定语从句修饰 diversions，with which 在从句中作状语

句子翻译

在跨越大西洋开始新的生活后，美国的早期欧洲移民并没有抛弃他们的祖先传统上借以解闷的消遣。

adj. 地热的　　介词短语作状语　　状语从句　　情态动词表示不确定性

20 Geothermal energy is in a sense not renewable, because in most cases the heat would be drawn

预判后面有 than　　连词　　情态动词表示不确定性

out of a reservoir much more rapidly than it would be replaced by the very slow geological

n. 蓄水池；蓄积　　介词短语作状语　　代词指代 heat

processes by which heat flows through solid rock into a heat reservoir.

定语从句修饰 processes，by which 在从句中作状语　　介词短语作状语

句子翻译

地热能在某种意义上不可再生，因为大多数情况下从热源中消耗热量的速度远远快于缓慢地质变化替换热量的速度，在这种缓慢地质变化中热量经过岩石进入热源。

补语从句，how 在从句中作状语

21 Rent control is the system whereby the local government tells building owners how much they

连词，相当于 by which 或 according to which

can charge their tenants in rent.

句子翻译

租金管制是当地政府借以告诉房主他们可以向租户收取多少租金的系统。

第六节　动词作定语如何破？

第二章第三节《动词作谓语谁都懂，动词作非谓语呢？》已经介绍了动词作定语的所有情况，所谓判别两次是阅读时下意识判别，速度非常快，不是停下来去想。

典型例句分析

22

动词作定语修饰 compound

A useful definition of an air pollutant is a compound added directly or indirectly by humans to the atmosphere in such quantities as to affect humans, animals, vegetation, or materials adversely.

副词作状语后置，如果此处宾语过长，副词将会提前，参见第八章第三节《宾语后置现象如何破？》。

介词短语作状语

形容词作定语修饰 quantities

句子翻译

空气污染物的一个有用的定义是一种被人类直接或间接加入大气里以一种足以对人类、动物、植物或物质产生不利影响的数量的化合物。

23

动词作状语

动词作定语修饰 events

Recognizing the power of television's pictures, politicians craft televisual, staged events, called pseudo-events, designed to attract media coverage.

谓语动词，意为“制作”

动词作定语修饰 events

pref. 假，虚

动词作定语修饰 events

句子翻译

在认识到电视画面的威力后，政治家们精心制作旨在吸引媒体报道的经过故意安排的电视事件，这些事件被称为“虚构事件”。

动词作定语修饰 conflict　　*n.* 实体　　动词作定语修饰 entities

24 Conflict, defined as opposition among social entities directed against each other, is distinguished

动词作定语修饰 competition

from competition, defined as opposition among social entities independently striving for

动词作定语修饰 entities

something which is in inadequate supply.

定语从句修饰 something

句子翻译

冲突不同于竞争，前者被定义为发生在社会对立群体间的对抗，后者被定义为发生在独力争夺稀缺资源的社会群体间的对抗。

介词短语作状语　　定语从句修饰 image　　*adj.* 典型的；老套的

25 In short the image that best represents the current crisis is the stereotypical scene of a man

动词作定语修饰 man

sitting at the breakfast table with a cellphone held up in front of his face while a woman glares at

代词指代 cellphone　　介词短语作状语　　动词作定语修饰 cellphone　　状语从句

the back of it wanting to talk.

动词作状语

句子翻译

简而言之，最能代表当前危机的是这样一个典型场景，场景里一个男人早餐时玩着手机，与此同时一个对他怒目而视的女人马上要开口说话。

第七节　百句练兵突破长定语（必杀句 28 ～ 50）

必杀句 28

难度系数 2.5

宾语从句　动词作定语修饰 meteorites　副词作状语修饰 believed

Recently some scientists have concluded that meteorites found on Earth and long believed to

n. 陨石　found 和 believed 定语并联　动词作定语修饰 meteorites

have a Martian origin might actually have been blasted free of Mar's gravity by the impact on

形容词作补语　介词短语作状语

Mars of other meteorites.

句子翻译

最近一些科学家得出结论，那些在地球上被发现并长期被认为源自火星的陨石实际上可能源自其他撞击火星而摆脱火星重力的陨石。

必杀句 29

难度系数 3.0

动词作定语修饰 adaptation　介词短语作定语修饰 adaptation　代词指代 adaptation，比较结构必须对称

A very specialized feeding adaptation in zooplankton is that of the tadpole-like appendicularian

动词作定语修饰 adaptation　*n.* 浮游动物　*n.* 尾海鞘纲动物

who lives in a walnut-sized (or smaller) balloon of mucus equipped with filters that capture and

定语从句修饰 appendicularian　*n.* 黏液　动词作定语修饰 balloon　定语从句修饰 filters

concentrate phytoplankton.

n. 浮游植物

句子翻译

浮游生物体内一种极为特殊的进食适应是蝌蚪状的尾海鞘纲生物的适应，这种生物存活于核桃大小或者更小的黏液球囊内，装备有过滤器，用以捕捉和集中浮游植物。

必杀句 30

难度系数 4.0

定语从句修饰 preindustrial Europe，插入语比较独立，所以用括号而不是用逗号。

In the early 1950's, historians who studied preindustrial Europe (which we may define here as

定语从句修饰 historians　介词短语作状语　介词短语作状语

Europe in the period from roughly 1300 to 1800) began, for the first time in large numbers, to

动词作宾语　定语从句修饰 two or three percent (population)

investigate more of the preindustrial European population than the two or three percent who

名词作宾语，预判后面有 than　介词短语作状语

comprised the political and social elite: the kings, generals, judges, nobles, bishops, and local

定语从句修饰前面并列的所有名词

magnates who had hitherto usually filled history books.

过去完成时，因为主句是一般过去时。　副词作状语，意为“迄今为止”。

句子翻译

二十世纪五十年代早期，研究前工业化时代的欧洲（此处我们可将其定义为 1300 年至 1800 年这一时期的欧洲）的历史学家，首次大量地开始调查前工业化时代欧洲人口中的大多数人，而不是那些构成了政治与社会精英的百分之二或三的人口，即那些在那时之前充斥于史学著作的国王、将军、法官、贵族、主教以及当地权贵。

难句解析

此句包含多个定语从句串联，和中文语序极大不同。

必杀句 31

难度系数 3.5

形式主语　形容词作补语　介词短语作状语　宾语从句

Is it not tyrannical, in Pascal's sense, to insist that those who excel in "sensitivity" or "the ability to

adj. 暴政的，专横的　*vt.* 值得获得　动词作主语　定语从句修饰 those　代词指代 qualities

express compassion" merit equal wealth with those who excel in qualities (such as "the capacity

宾语从句谓语动词，例如 His good work merits a raise。　介词短语作状语　定语从句修饰 those，与前文 those who 对称。

for hard work") essential in producing wealth?

形容词作后置定语修饰 qualities

句子翻译

根据帕斯卡的观点，坚持这样一种观点难道就不是暴政吗？即那些在“敏感性”或“表达同情心的能力”上突出的人比那些在对赚钱重要的能力（比如“刻苦工作的能力”）上突出的人值得获得相同的财富。

必杀句 32

难度系数 3.5

介词短语作状语　介词短语作定语修饰 arrangement　*n.* 胚珠　*n.* 松球

For example, the spiral arrangement of scale-bract complexes on ovule-bearing pine cones,

adj. 螺旋形的 *v.* 螺旋上升　*n.* 松柏科植物　*n.* 鳞苞综合体　介词短语作定语修饰 complexes

where the female reproductive organs of conifers are located, is important to the production of

定语从句修饰 ovule-bearing pine cones，where 在从句中作状语。　主句谓语动词，读到此处不要忘了主语是什么。形容词作补语　介词短语作状语

airflow patterns that spiral over the cone's surfaces, thereby passing airborne pollen from one

定语从句修饰 airflow patterns　副词作状语，意为“因此”　动词作状语

scale to the next.

句子翻译

例如，含有胚珠的松球上的鳞苞综合体的螺旋状结构，也就是松柏科植物雌性生殖器官所在的位置，对于在松球表面螺旋上升的气流模式的形成尤为重要，由此把空气承载的花粉从一个鳞苞传至下一个鳞苞。

难句解析

此句主干其实非常简单，但各个成分通过后置定语和状语拉长后有一定难度。

必杀句 33

难度系数 3.0

定语从句修饰前面并列的名词

The American Law Institute— a group of judges, lawyers, and academics whose recommendations

adj. 物质的；大量的　*n.* 侵权法　宾语从句

carry substantial weight — issued new guidelines for tort law stating that companies

意为“权重”，类似于数学里的加权平均　动词作定语修饰 tort law

need not warn customers of obvious dangers or bombard them with a lengthy list of

介词短语作补语　warn 和 bombard 补语并列　*vt.* 轰炸　介词短语作补语

possible ones.

代词指代 dangers

句子翻译

由一群建议分量极重的法官、律师和理论专家组成的美国法学会，发布了新的侵权法大纲，宣称公司无需提醒顾客注意显而易见的危险，也无需长篇累牍地提醒他们注意一些可能会出现的危险。

必杀句 34

难度系数 3.5

形容词作定语修饰 concerns

Such philosophical concerns as the mind–body problem or, more generally, the nature of human

定语从句修饰 questions

knowledge they believe, are basic human questions whose tentative philosophical solutions have

省略 that 的定语从句修饰 knowledge

served as the necessary foundations on which all other intellectual speculation has rested.

介词短语作补语　　定语从句修饰 foundations，on which 在从句中作状语。

句子翻译

他们相信，诸如灵与肉的问题，或更广泛地说，人类知识本质之类的哲学关注，都是基本的人类问题，这些问题的探索性哲学答案已经构成了其他所有智力思辨的基础。

必杀句 35

难度系数 4.0

动词作状语　　形容词作定语修饰 effects

In order to understand the nature of the ecologist's investigation, we may think of the density–dependent

介词短语作定语修饰 effects　　介词短语作补语

effects on growth parameters as the "signal" ecologists are trying to isolate and interpret,

省略 that 的定语从句修饰 signal，此处快速认出是定语从句的关键是 isolate 和 interpret 都有很强的及物动词语感，之后没有宾语则宾语肯定在前面。

代词指代 signal

one that tends to make the population increase from relatively low values or decrease from

定语从句修饰 one　　代词指代 values　　预判后面有 from high ones

relatively high ones, while the density–independent effects act to produce "noise" in the

状语从句，放在最后作为补充说明，说明不太重要　　动词作宾语

population dynamics.

句子翻译

为了理解生态学家从事的研究的本质，我们可以把增长参数的密度依赖效应看作生态学家们努力分离并解释的"信号"，这个信号倾向于使种群从相对较低的数值递增或从相对较高的数值递减，与此同时，密度独立效应在种群动态方面通过产生"干扰"发生作用。

难句解析

对于省略 that 的定语从句，应该达到的境界是读到先行词就感觉出来，大部分人的境界是读到 interpret，思考一会才反应过来是定语从句。学语法的目的不是停下来思考每个成分，而是用语感感觉出来是什么成分。

必杀句 36

难度系数 3.0

n. 对应物　介词短语作状语　定语从句修饰 theme

Does this technique provide a counterpoint to the prevalent theme that portrays the fate

名词作同位语解释 prevalent theme，同必杀句 24，因为前后定语太多太长，只能以同位语的形式出现从而再加一个定语。

动词作定语修饰 theme

against which Black heroes are pitted, a theme usually conveyed by more naturalistic modes of

定语从句修饰 fate。从句部分是 Black heroes are pitted against the fate，pit 意为“坑”或“战壕”，作动词引申为“跳到战壕里打仗”。

expression?

句子翻译

这种技巧是否为刻画了黑人主人公抗争的命运的流行主题提供了一个对应？该主题通过更加自然主义的表现手法被表达出来。

必杀句 37

难度系数 3.0

定语从句修饰 magnet

Silicon Valley is a magnet to which numerous talented engineers, scientists and entrepreneurs

n. 企业家，创业者

介词短语作定语修饰前面并列的名词

from overseas flock in search of fame, fast money and to participate in a technological revolution

介词短语作状语　介词短语作定语修饰 impact　in search of 和 to participate in 状语并列

whose impact on mankind will surely surpass the epoch-making European Renaissance and

定语从句修饰 revolution　*adj.* 过去的　动词作定语修饰 Renaissance 和 Revolution

Industrial Revolution of the bygone age.

介词短语作定语修饰 Renaissance 和 Revolution

句子翻译

硅谷极具吸引力，让无数才华横溢的海外工程师、科学家和企业家为了名利蜂拥而至参与其中的科技革命，这个科技革命对人类的冲击一定会超过曾经具有划时代意义的欧洲文艺复兴和工业革命。

必杀句 38

难度系数 3.0

n. 传染病；流行 *adj.* 流行的，普遍的　　介词短语作定语修饰 populations

Virgin-soil epidemics are those in which the populations at risk have had no previous contact

介词短语作状语　代词指代 epidemics　定语从句修饰 those　　形容词作定语修饰 contact

with the diseases that strike them and are therefore immunologically almost defenseless.

定语从句修饰 diseases　have had no contact 和 are defenseless 并列，并列的动词时间一致。　副词作状语　*adv.* 免疫地

句子翻译

处女地流行病是这样一些疾病，疾病中的危险人群以前从未接触过那些侵袭他们的疾病，因此这些危险人群在免疫上几乎毫无防备。

必杀句 39

难度系数 2.5

预判后面有 but，引起倒装　　代词指代 transplants

Not only are liver transplants never rejected, but they even induce a state of donor-specific unresponsiveness

adj. 随后的

in which subsequent transplants of other organs, such as skin, from that donor are accepted permanently.

定语从句修饰 state　　介词短语作定语修饰 organs

句子翻译

肝脏移植不仅从来没有被排斥，甚至还引发了一种特定捐赠者无应答状态，在此状态中该捐赠者其他器官随后的移植会永久地被接受，比如皮肤。

必杀句 40

难度系数 4.0

n. 授粉　介词短语作定语修饰 pollination

Traditionally, pollination by wind has been viewed as a reproductive process marked by random

介词短语作补语　　动词作定语修饰 process

events in which the vagaries of the wind are compensated for by the generation of vast quantities

定语从句修饰 events　*n.* 怪异多变　　*v.* 补偿　介词短语作状语

of pollen, so that the ultimate production of new seeds is assured at the expense of producing

n. 花粉　连词　　介词短语作状语

much more pollen than is actually used.

句子翻译

传统上，风媒授粉被看成由随机事件表现的繁殖过程，在随机事件里反复无常的风向被大量产生的花粉弥补，通过产生比实际用到的多得多的花粉，最终使得新种子的产生被保证。

必杀句 41

难度系数 3.5

介词短语作定语修饰 factor　　副词作状语

The key factor in the success of these countries (along with high literacy, which contributed

代词指代 success　　介词短语作状语　　定语从句修饰 literacy

to it) was their ability to adapt to the international division of labor determined by the early

动词作定语修饰 ability　　动词作定语修饰 division

industrializers and to stake out areas of specialization in international markets for which they were

to adapt to 和 to stake out 定语并列　　短语动词，意为“监视”　　定语从句修饰 markets

especially well suited.

句子翻译

这些国家成功的关键因素（同时随着促成成功的高文化水平）在于这些国家适应早期工业化国家决定的国际劳动力分工的能力，还在于监视非常适合他们的国际市场的专业化领域的能力。

必杀句 42

难度系数 3.0

形容词作后置定语修饰 constituents　　形式主语

As vitamins became recognized as essential food constituents necessary for health, it became

状语从句　　介词短语作补语　　主句谓语动词是 became，从句才能用过去完成时

tempting to suggest that every disease and condition for which there had been no previous

动词作主语　　宾语从句　　定语从句修饰 disease 和 condition

effective treatment might be responsive to vitamin therapy.

介词短语作状语

句子翻译

由于维生素被认为是健康必需的食物成分，所以过去没有有效疗法的每种疾病和状况都可能对维生素疗法起反应这一建议变得极具吸引力。

必杀句 43

难度系数 4.5

代词指代 century　定语从句修饰 one，in which 在从句中作状语

The eighteenth century was not one in which powered sculptural conceptions were developed.

祈使句谓语动词　定语从句修饰 timidity　动词作定语修饰 artisans　*n.* 石匠

Add to this the timidity with which unschooled artisans— originally trained as stonemasons,

宾语后置现象，参见第八章第三节《宾语后置现象如何破？》。因为修饰宾语的定语太长，所以把较短的补语 to this 提前，如果写成正常语序 add the timidity to this，with which 定语从句将无处安放。

carpenters, or cabinetmakers—attacked the medium from which they were to make their images,

并列句，前后同等重要　定语从句修饰 medium　动词作定语修饰 development

and one understands more fully the development of sculpture made in the United States in the

宾语后置现象，状语 more fully 提前，同样因为 made 动词定语较长。

late eighteenth century.

句子翻译

十八世纪不是一个有力量的雕塑概念形成的世纪。在这之上加上最初被训练成石匠、木匠或家具木工的没有受过学校教育的工匠敲打他们要制作成雕像的媒介物的胆怯，同时，一个人更充分地了解十八世纪晚期美国雕刻艺术的发展。

难句解析

关系代词前有介词的定语从句本来就不好理解，此句同时包含 with which 和 from which，非常抽象，是值得读熟的最佳例句。

必杀句 44

难度系数 4.0

定语从句修饰 frequency　介词短语作状语

The frequency with which certain simple motifs appear in these oldest sites has led rock-art

定语从句修饰 label

researchers to adopt a descriptive term—the Panaramitee style—a label which takes its name

动词作补语　名词作同位语解释 term

from the extensive rock pavements at Panaramitee North in desert South Australia, which are

介词短语作补语　定语从句修饰 rock pavements

covered with motifs pecked into the surface.

动词作定语修饰 motifs

句子翻译

某些简单图案在这些最古老的遗址上出现的频率使得岩石艺术研究者采用一种描述性术语——帕纳拉美风格，这种叫法取名自澳大利亚南部沙漠帕纳拉美北部广袤的表面刻有这些图案的岩石路面。

必杀句 45

难度系数 3.0

介词短语作定语修饰 statement

Virginia Woolf's provocative statement about her intentions in writing *Mrs. Dalloway* has regularly

介词短语作状语。理解成定语修饰 intentions 也未尝不可，六个格子有时不那么泾渭分明，取决于读者自身的理解。

been ignored by the critics, since it highlights an aspect of her literary interests very different

介词短语作状语　连词　代词指代 statement　介词短语作定语修饰 aspect　形容词作后置定语修饰 interests

from the traditional picture of the "poetic" novelist concerned with examining states of reverie and

介词短语作定语修饰 picture　动词作定语修饰 novelist，以上是一系列串联的定语。　*n.* 空想，幻想

vision and with following the intricate pathways of individual consciousness.

with examinig 和 with following 并列。with 不能省，同必杀句 4 的 and from。

不需要详细理解这些抽象的文学评论单词，知道结构即可。

句子翻译

弗吉尼亚·伍尔夫在创作《达洛卫夫人》时关于她创作意图的发人深省的陈述经常被文学评论家们忽略，因为它突出地反映了她诸多文学兴趣中的一个方面，该方面与人们对诗意小说家的传统见解大相径庭，这些诗意小说家关注的是审视幻想和视觉的状态以及追寻个体意识的通幽曲径。

难句解析

此句又是一个极长的串联定语，从 aspect 开始都是向右扩展的定语，最后包含两个并列的定语。

背景知识

弗吉尼亚·伍尔夫（Virginia Woolf，1882–1941），英国女作家、文学批评家和文学理论家，意识流文学代表人物，被誉为二十世纪现代主义与女性主义的先锋。两次世界大战期间，她是伦敦文学界的核心人物，代表作《达洛卫夫人》。

必杀句 46

难度系数 4.0

介词短语作定语修饰 basis　　名词作同位语解释 misinterpretation

The basis for this view, however, lies in a serious misinterpretation of the past, a projection of

介词短语作定语修饰 concerns

modern concerns onto past events. The idea of an autonomous discipline called "philosophy",

并列的定语修饰 discipline。"坐在它们的判决上"意为"判定"。*adj.* 自治的

distinct from and sitting in judgment on such pursuits as theology and science turns out, on close

形容词作定语修饰 pursuits　形容词作后置定语修饰 discipline　*n.* 追赶；工作　介词短语作状语

examination, to be of quite recent origin.

动词作补语

句子翻译

然而，这一见解的基础是对于过去的严重误解，即用现代眼光对过去事件的一个反映。有别于并且判定诸如神学和科学等学科的被称作"哲学"的独立学科概念仔细看来是非常近代的事情。

必杀句 47

难度系数 4.0

动词作定语修饰 a series of deposits and events

This succession was based primarily on a series of deposits and events not directly related

连词，根据原则五，两个介词 on 并列

to glacial and interglacial periods, rather than on the more usual modern method of studying

adj. 冰川的　*adj.* 间冰期的　*vt.* 放在层间　介词短语作定语修饰 method

biological remains found in interglacial beds themselves interstratified within glacial deposits.

动词作定语修饰 beds　动词作定语修饰 remains

句子翻译

这一序列更替主要依据与冰川期和间冰期不直接相关的一系列沉积物和事件，而不依据研究间冰层中所发现的生物残余的更为普遍的现代方法，这些间冰层本身在冰川沉积物中层化。

难句解析

一个人不管词汇量多大，在学术作品中一定会经常遇见此类词汇，迅速跳过并看出结构是一种能力。比如此句中的多重定语，此句的语感如果用中英文描述出来是"研究生物残余的 method，这个生物残余是在 interglacial beds 中被找到，这些 interglacial beds 自身在 glacial deposits 中被 interstratified"。

必杀句 48

难度系数 3.5

n. 贬低者　宾语从句　情态动词暗示较弱的可能性

But detractors maintain that the terraces could also have been created by geological activity,

副词作状语，but 既可以作副词也可以作连词

perhaps related to the geologic forces that depressed the Northern Hemisphere far below the

动词作定语修饰 activity　关系从句　定语从句修饰 forces　副词作状语

level of the south, in which case they have nothing whatever to do with Martian water.

句子翻译

但批评者坚持认为台地可以是由于地质活动而形成，这种地质活动也许与使得北半球比南部地势更低的地质力量有关，这说明他们的形成与火星水无关。

必杀句 49

难度系数 4.0

介词短语作定语修饰 manipulation

Such large, impersonal manipulation of capital and industry greatly increased the numbers and

介词短语作定语修饰 numbers 和 importance　动词作定语修饰 element

importance of shareholders as a class, an element in national life representing irresponsible

介词短语作定语修饰 shareholders　名词作同位语解释前面整个主句

wealth detached from the land and the duties of the landowners; and almost equally detached

动词作定语修饰 wealth　两个 detached from 动词定语并列

from the responsible management of business.

句子翻译

这些对资金和行业的大型非个人操纵极大地增加了作为一个阶级的股东的数量和重要性，这是国家生活中代表不承担责任的财富的一个要素，这种财富不但与土地和土地所有者的责任无关，而且几乎同样与商业责任管理无关。

必杀句 50

难度系数 4.5

Calculations of the density of alloys based on Bernal–type models of the alloys metal component agreed fairly well with the experimentally determined values from measurements on alloys consisting of a noble metal together with a metalloid, such as alloys of palladium and silicon, or alloys consisting of iron, phosphorus, and carbon, although small discrepancies remained.

动词作状语　动词作定语修饰 values　介词短语作定语修饰 values

动词作定语修饰 alloys　*n.* 贵金属　介词短语作状语　*n.* 类金属　介词短语作定语修饰 measurements

动词作定语修饰 alloys　*n.* 磷　状语从句　*n.* 矛盾，出入　*n.* 钯　*n.* 硅

句子翻译

以合金金属成分伯纳尔模型类型为基础，尽管存在细微的误差，合金密度的计算与实验决定的值吻合得非常好，这个值来源于对包含一贵金属和一类金属的合金，比如钯和硅的合金的测量，或来源于对包含铁、磷、碳的合金的测量。

第八节 百句精练

典型例句

S_1 An impact (on the Mars) capable of ejecting a fragment of the Martian surface into an Earth–intersecting orbit is even less probable than such an event on the Moon, in view of the Moon's smaller size and closer proximity to Earth.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_2 During the 1940's electron microscopes routinely achieved resolution better than that possible with a visible light microscope, while the performance of x–ray microscopes resisted improvement.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_3 Present–day philosophers usually envision their discipline as an endeavor that has been, since antiquity, distinct from and superior to any particular intellectual discipline such as theology or science.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_4 Kodak's decision to file for bankruptcy protection is a sad, though not unexpected, turning point for a leading American corporation that pioneered consumer photography and dominated the film market for decades, but ultimately failed to adapt to the digital revolution.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_5 A survey conducted in Britain confirmed that an abnormally high percentage of patients suffering from arthritis of the spine who had been treated with X–rays contracted cancer.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_6 Behaviorists suggest that the child who is raised in an environment where there are many stimuli which develop his or her capacity for appropriate response will experience greater intellectual development.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_7 The elastic characteristics encountered (by seismic waves) generally change abruptly, which causes part of the energy to be reflected back to the surface, where it is recorded by seismic instruments.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_8 In agriculture, the transformation was marked by the emergence of the grain elevators, the cotton presses, the warehouses, and the commodity exchanges that seemed to so many of the nation's farmers the visible sign of a vast conspiracy against them.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_9 We are treated to fine hypocritical spectacles, which now more than ever seem in ample supply: the critic of American materialism with a Southampton summer home; the publisher of radical books who takes his meals in three-star restaurants; the journalist advocating participatory democracy in all phases of life, whose own children are enrolled in private schools.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{10} He set up experiments with caged starlings and found that their orientation was, in fact, in the proper migratory direction except when the sky was overcast, at which times there was no clear direction to their restless movements.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{11} Kindergartens, vacation schools, extracurricular activities, and vocational education and counseling extended the influence of public schools over the lives of students, many of whom in the larger industrial cities were the children of immigrants.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{12} As a result of crustal adjustments and faulting, the Strait of Gibraltar, where the Mediterranean now connects to the Atlantic, opened, and water cascaded spectacularly back into the Mediterranean.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{13} As among tribes people, personal relationships and a careful weighing of character have always been crucial in a mercantile economy with little regulation, where one's word is one's bond and where informal ties of trust cement together an international trade network.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{14} They are called virtual particles in order to distinguish them from real particles, whose lifetimes are not constrained in the same way, and which can be detected.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{15} Over long periods of time, substances whose physical and chemical properties change with the ambient climate at the time can be deposited in a systematic way to provide a continuous record of changes in those properties overtime, sometimes for hundreds or thousands of years.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{16} Moreover, the degree to which cones are naturally slightly open or tightly closed helps determine which bill design is the best.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{17} The different uses to which societies put these materials are of interest to anthropologists who may ask, for example, why a people chooses to use clay and not copper when both items are available.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{18} Now, scientists have data from satellites and ground–based observations from which we know that the auroral brilliance is an immense electrical discharge similar to that occurring in a neon sign.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{19} In taking up a new life across the Atlantic, the early European settlers of the United States did not abandon the diversions with which their ancestors had traditionally relieved the tedium of life.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{20} Geothermal energy is in a sense not renewable, because in most cases the heat would be drawn out of a reservoir much more rapidly than it would be replaced by the very slow geological processes by which heat flows through solid rock into a heat reservoir.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{21} Rent control is the system whereby the local government tells building owners how much they can charge their tenants in rent.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{22} A useful definition of an air pollutant is a compound added directly or indirectly by humans to the atmosphere in such quantities as to affect humans, animals, vegetation, or materials adversely.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{23} Recognizing the power of television's pictures, politicians craft televisual, staged events, called pseudo–events, designed to attract media coverage.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{24} Conflict, defined as opposition among social entities directed against each other, is distinguished from competition, defined as opposition among social entities independently striving for something which is in inadequate supply.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S25 In short the image that best represents the current crisis is the stereotypical scene of a man sitting at the breakfast table with a cellphone held up in front of his face while a woman glares at the back of it wanting to talk.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

必杀句 28 ~ 50

S28 Recently some scientists have concluded that meteorites found on Earth and long believed to have a Martian origin might actually have been blasted free of Mar's gravity by the impact on Mars of other meteorites.

精读遍数： ❑

S29 A very specialized feeding adaptation in zooplankton is that of the tadpole–like appendicularian who lives in a walnut–sized (or smaller) balloon of mucus equipped with filters that capture and concentrate phytoplankton.

精读遍数： ❑

S30 In the early 1950's, historians who studied preindustrial Europe (which we may define here as Europe in the period from roughly 1300 to 1800) began, for the first time in large numbers, to investigate more of the preindustrial European population than the two or three percent who comprised the political and social elite: the kings, generals, judges, nobles, bishops, and local magnates who had hitherto usually filled history books.

精读遍数： ❑

S31 Is it not tyrannical, in Pascal's sense, to insist that those who excel in "sensitivity" or "the ability to express compassion" merit equal wealth with those who excel in qualities (such as "the capacity for hard work") essential in producing wealth?

精读遍数： ❑

S32 For example, the spiral arrangement of scale–bract complexes on ovule–bearing pine cones, where the female reproductive organs of conifers are located, is important to the production of airflow patterns that spiral over the cone's surfaces, thereby passing airborne pollen from one scale to the next.

精读遍数： ❑

S33 The American Law Institute—a group of judges, lawyers, and academics whose recommendations carry substantial weight—issued new guidelines for tort law stating that companies need not warn customers of obvious dangers or bombard them with a lengthy list of possible ones.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{34} Such philosophical concerns as the mind–body problem or, more generally, the nature of human knowledge they believe, are basic human questions whose tentative philosophical solutions have served as the necessary foundations on which all other intellectual speculation has rested.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{35} In order to understand the nature of the ecologist's investigation, we may think of the density–dependent effects on growth parameters as the "signal" ecologists are trying to isolate and interpret, one that tends to make the population increase from relatively low values or decrease from relatively high ones, while the density–independent effects act to produce "noise" in the population dynamics.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{36} Does this technique provide a counterpoint to the prevalent theme that portrays the fate against which Black heroes are pitted, a theme usually conveyed by more naturalistic modes of expression?

精读遍数： ❑

S_{37} Silicon Valley is a magnet to which numerous talented engineers, scientists and entrepreneurs from overseas flock in search of fame, fast money and to participate in a technological revolution whose impact on mankind will surely surpass the epoch–making European Renaissance and Industrial Revolution of the bygone age.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{38} Virgin–soil epidemics are those in which the populations at risk have had no previous contact with the diseases that strike them and are therefore immunologically almost defenseless.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{39} Not only are liver transplants never rejected, but they even induce a state of donor–specific unresponsiveness in which subsequent transplants of other organs, such as skin, from that donor are accepted permanently.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{40} Traditionally, pollination by wind has been viewed as a reproductive process marked by random events in which the vagaries of the wind are compensated for by the generation of vast quantities of pollen, so that the ultimate production of new seeds is assured at the expense of producing much more pollen than is actually used.

精读遍数： ❑

S41 The key factor in the success of these countries (along with high literacy, which contributed to it) was their ability to adapt to the international division of labor determined by the early industrializers and to stake out areas of specialization in international markets for which they were especially well suited.

精读遍数： ❑

S42 As vitamins became recognized as essential food constituents necessary for health, it became tempting to suggest that every disease and condition for which there had been no previous effective treatment might be responsive to vitamin therapy.

精读遍数： ❑

S43 The eighteenth century was not one in which powered sculptural conceptions were developed. Add to this the timidity with which unschooled artisans—originally trained as stonemasons, carpenters, or cabinetmakers—attacked the medium from which they were to make their images, and one understands more fully the development of sculpture made in the United States in the late eighteenth century.

精读遍数： ❑

S44 The frequency with which certain simple motifs appear in these oldest sites has led rock-art researchers to adopt a descriptive term—the Panaramitee style—a label which takes its name from the extensive rock pavements at Panaramitee North in desert South Australia, which are covered with motifs pecked into the surface.

精读遍数： ❑

S45 Virginia Woolf's provocative statement about her intentions in writing *Mrs. Dalloway* has regularly been ignored by the critics, since it highlights an aspect of her literary interests very different from the traditional picture of the "poetic" novelist concerned with examining states of reverie and vision and with following the intricate pathways of individual consciousness.

精读遍数： ❑

S46 The basis for this view, however, lies in a serious misinterpretation of the past, a projection of modern concerns onto past events. The idea of an autonomous discipline called "philosophy", distinct from and sitting in judgment on such pursuits as theology and science turns out, on close examination, to be of quite recent origin.

精读遍数： ❑

S47 This succession was based primarily on a series of deposits and events not directly related to glacial and interglacial periods, rather than on the more usual modern method of studying biological remains found in interglacial beds themselves interstratified within glacial deposits.

精读遍数： ❑

S48 But detractors maintain that the terraces could also have been created by geological activity, perhaps related to the geologic forces that depressed the Northern Hemisphere far below the level of the south, in which case they have nothing whatever to do with Martian water.

精读遍数： ❑

S49 Such large, impersonal manipulation of capital and industry greatly increased the numbers and importance of shareholders as a class, an element in national life representing irresponsible wealth detached from the land and the duties of the landowners; and almost equally detached from the responsible management of business.

精读遍数： ❑

S50 Calculations of the density of alloys based on Bernal–type models of the alloys metal component agreed fairly well with the experimentally determined values from measurements on alloys consisting of a noble metal together with a metalloid, such as alloys of palladium and silicon, or alloys consisting of iron, phosphorus, and carbon, although small discrepancies remained.

精读遍数： ❑

第六章

一目十行——长状语如何略读

状语表示状态，感觉是“悬空的”，往往用逗号隔开，可以出现在句首、句中和句末，一般和主干关系不紧密。因为状语一般不被看重，所以状语经常后置。请注意长状语句子的中文翻译语序和英语完全反过来。

第一节　多重状语如何破？

典型例句分析

1

宾语从句　　介词短语作状语

Other theorists propose that the Moon was ripped out of the Earth's rocky mantle by the Earth's collision with another large celestial body after much of the Earth's iron fell to its core.

介词短语作状语　　*adj.* 天空的

状语从句。以上三个状语串联，中文翻译要完全倒过来。

句子翻译

其他理论家提出，在地球大部分铁沉入地核之后，因为一个巨大的天体与地球碰撞，月亮从地球的石质地幔中撕裂出来。

2

adj. 同位素的　　*n.* 铅　　介词短语作状语　　*n.* 铜　　*n.* 矿，矿石

The isotopic composition of lead often varies from one source of common copper ore to another, with variations exceeding the measurement error; and preliminary studies indicate virtually uniform isotopic composition of the lead from a single copper-ore source.

介词短语作状语　　动词作定语修饰 variations　　并列句，前后同等重要

介词短语作定语修饰 composition　　动词作定语修饰 variations

句子翻译

在不同来源的普通铜矿石之间的铅的同位素构成通常差异很大，这种差异程度超出测量误差；最初的研究表明，来自同一铜矿石的铅拥有几乎完全一致的同位素构成。

第二节　so…that… 句型如何破?

必须明确此时 that 引导的是状语从句，描述 so 的程度。请看圣经原文：

典型例句分析

连词，和 that whosoever 的 that 形成“因为……所以”　　主语从句。相当于 whoever，常用于正式文体中。

3 For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him

副词作状语修饰 loved，预判后面有 that　　状语从句，描述 so loved 的程度

should not perish, but have everlasting life.

vi. 消亡，毁灭

句子翻译

神爱世人，甚至将他的独生子赐给他们，叫一切信他的，不至灭亡，反得永生。

同位语从句解释 message　　副词作状语修饰 deep-rooted，预判后面有 that

4 But the message that everyone must screen for cancer has become so deep-rooted that when

状语从句，描述 so deep-rooted 的程度

health care experts recommended that women under 50 and over 74 stop screening for breast

宾语从句　　省略情态动词 should

cancer, it caused a riotous reaction among doctors, patients and advocacy groups.

adj. 狂暴的

句子翻译

但每个人都必须进行癌症筛查的想法已经根深蒂固，以至于当医疗保健专家建议五十岁以下和七十四岁以上的女性应该停止乳腺癌筛查时，这在医生、患者和主张筛查的群体中引起了激烈的反应。

sufficient material that 就是 so much material that　　状语从句

5 Apparently most massive stars manage to lose sufficient material that their masses drop below the critical value of 1.4M before they exhaust their nuclear fuel.

句子翻译

显然，大多数的大质量星能够失去足够多的物质以至于在耗尽其核燃料以前他们的质量下降到 1.4M 的关键值以下。

such a subjective matter 相当于 a matter so subjective

6 Taste is such a subjective matter that we don't usually conduct preference tests for food.

状语从句

句子翻译

口味是一个非常主观的问题，所以我们一般不对食物进行偏好测试。

so…that… 句型的变形，so much 相当于 so，连词 so that 相当于 that

7 Americans give too much importance to individualism and personal gains, so much so that it might sacrifice collective benefits.

句子翻译

美国人太过于注重个人主义和个人所得，以至于可能会牺牲集体的利益。

so…that… 句型的变形，so much 相当于 so，连词 so that 相当于 that

8 She suffers from a constant lack of energy so much so that she had to give up her job in catering ten years ago.

句子翻译

她身体持续乏力，以至于不得不十年前就放弃了餐饮的工作。

状语从句

9 Since the laws of physics, not some arbitrary decision, have determined the general form of applied–art objects, they follow basic patterns, so much so that functional forms can vary only within certain limits.

句子翻译

物理规律而非一些武断的结论决定了实用工艺品的一般形式，它们如此遵循基本的样式以至于它们的功能形式只能在小的范围内变化。

第三节　动词作状语如何破?

六成长难句中都包含动词作状语。作为状语的一种，动词状语同样可以出现在句首、句中和句末，动词状语如果后置通常称为伴随状语，表示补充说明。

典型例句分析

10 The temperature increased dramatically in a short period of time (years rather than centuries), allowing for a growth of the hunting–gathering population due to the abundance of resources.

动词作状语　　介词短语作状语

句子翻译

短时期内（数年而不是数世纪）温度急剧上升，因为食物资源丰富使得集体狩猎者的数量增加。

11 Hallucinogens have their primary effect on perception, distorting and altering it in a variety of ways including producing hallucinations.

n. 迷幻剂　　介词短语作状语　　动词作状语　　并列的动词状语　　代词指代 perception　　介词短语作状语　　*n.* 幻觉

句子翻译

迷幻剂主要是对知觉产生影响，通过产生幻觉等多种方式扭曲和改变人的感知。

12 Growing tightly packed together and collectively weaving a dense canopy of branches, a stand of red alder trees can totally dominate a site to the exclusion of almost everything else.

动词作状语　　动词作状语　　*n.* 顶棚，华盖　　*n.* 红桤木

句子翻译

紧紧长在一起并且枝叶共同编织出一片严密的树顶，一片红桤木能完全占领一个地方以至于排除几乎任何其他植物的生长。

n. 缩影，摘要　　动词作状语

13 Hills and mountains are often regarded as the epitome of permanence, successfully resisting the

连词

destructive forces of nature, but in fact they tend to be relatively short-lived in geological terms.

句子翻译

山峰和山脉能够经受住自然界摧毁性的力量，它们通常被认作是永恒的化身，但在地质学上它们的存在实际上相对短暂。

介词短语作状语　　介词短语作状语　　动词作状语

14 Glaciers move slowly across the land with tremendous energy, carving into even the hardest rock

副词作状语，意为“因此”　　动词作状语　　状语从句

formations and thereby reshaping the landscape as they engulf, push, drag, and finally deposit

n. 残骸，碎片　　代词指代 glaciers　　*vt.* 吞没

rock debris in places far from its original location.

句子翻译

在巨大能量的作用下，冰川在陆地上缓慢移动，随着它们吞没、推动、拉拽，最后在离初始位置很远的地方沉淀岩石残余，冰川切碎甚至是最坚硬的岩石形态并因此重新塑造地貌。

难句解析

此句主干极其简短，carving 和 reshaping 两个动词状语并列，最后是 as 引导的状语从句。

宾语从句　　预判后面有 but also

15 These researchers have sought to demonstrate that their work can be a valuable tool not only of

连词，请注意并列结构的一致　　定语从句修饰 people

science but also of history, providing fresh insights into the daily lives of ordinary people whose

动词作状语

existences might not otherwise be so well documented.

副词作状语

句子翻译

这些研究人员已经力图证实他们的工作不仅可以成为科学的宝贵工具，而且还是历史的宝贵工具，为了解普通人的日常生活提供崭新的观点，如果不是这样这些普通人的生存状态不可能被记载得这么完整。

16

状语从句　名词作同位语解释 we　动词作状语

Now we must examine the culture as we Mexican Americans have experienced it, passing from

adj. 独立自主的，拥有最高统治权的　介词短语作状语　动词作定语修饰 people

a sovereign people to compatriots with newly arriving settlers to, finally, a conquered people—a

介词短语作状语　*n.* 同胞　介词短语作定语修饰 compatriots

charter minority on our own land.

n. 包租；许可证；宪章

句子翻译

现在，我们必须按照我们墨西哥裔美国人的经历来审视这个文化，我们从一个主权民族变成了新来定居者们的同胞，最后沦落成被征服的民族——在我们自己的土地上包租的少数民族。

17

定语从句修饰 education　动词作状语

An education that aims at getting a student a certain kind of job is a technical education, justified

副词作状语修饰 different　名词从句，why 在从句中作状语。此处 why 在从句中成分的理解非常微妙，不能简单略过

for reasons radically different from why compulsory education is universally required by law.

形容词作后置定语修饰 reasons

句子翻译

以帮助学生获取某种工作为目的的教育叫职业教育，它所依据的理由与法律普遍要求的义务教育依据的理由是完全不同的。

18

介词短语作状语　动词作状语

Totally without light and subjected to intense pressures hundreds of times greater than at the

介词短语作状语　介词短语作状语

Earth's surface, the deep-ocean bottom is a hostile environment to humans, in some ways as

n. 空隙，空间 *adj.* 空的

forbidding and remote as the void of outer space.

句子翻译

完全没有光而且承受着比地球表面大数百倍的压力，深海底部对人类而言是一个充满敌意的环境，某种程度上就像宇宙外层空间一样令人望而却步。

n. 纺织品，纺织业　　形容词作补语　　动词作主语

19 In textile areas it has long been customary for mothers to go out to work, but this practice has become

形式主语　　状语从句

so widespread that the working mother is now a not unusual factor in a child's home life, the number of

副词作状语修饰 widespread，预判后面有 that　　独立主格结构

married women in employment having more than doubled in the last twenty–five years.

句子翻译

纺织工业中母亲出去上班早已成为惯例，但是这种现象现在变得如此普遍以至于儿童的家庭生活里有一个上班的母亲变得司空见惯，因为最近二十五年中已婚妇女性就业的人数已翻倍。

难句解析

此句包含了 so…that… 句型和独立主格结构。第二章第三节《动词作谓语谁都懂，动词作非谓语呢？》提到独立主格是动词作状语的特殊形式，即状语的主语和主句的主语不一致，但还是判别两次。此句独立主格状语放在最后，表示伴随状态。

没有逗号隔开的状语

动词作状语有时也可以没有逗号，更需要适应。再次声明，英语的逗号不像中文的逗号是断句，英语逗号大多可有可无，作者只想表示一种停顿。而且写作中一定要避免逗号连接并列句，英语并列句必须有连词。

adj. 易受影响的

20 Women are particularly susceptible to developing depression and anxiety disorders in response

形容词作补语　　介词短语作状语　　介词短语作状语

to stress compared to men.

动词作状语

句子翻译

和男性相比女性在压力下尤其容易沮丧和精神焦虑。

动词作定语修饰 capacity　　副词作状语

21 Furthermore, humans have the capacity to modify the environment in which they live thus

定语从句修饰 environment，in which 在从句中作状语

subjecting all other life forms to their own peculiar ideas and fancies.

动词作状语　　介词短语作补语

句子翻译

此外，人类有改变自身居住环境的能力，因此使得所有其他生命形式都服从于他们自己奇特的想法和想象。

第四节　百句练兵突破长状语（必杀句 51 ～ 65）

必杀句 51

难度系数 2.5

介词短语作状语　动词名词化　*n.* 多面手，通才　动词作状语　名词从句　动词作补语

In addition to having to be a generalist while specializing in what may seem to be a narrow field,

定语从句修饰 materials

the researcher is faced with the problem of primary materials that have little or no documentation.

句子翻译

除了必须成为在一个似乎狭窄的领域里的多面手以外，研究人员还面临没有或只有极少原始材料记录的问题。

必杀句 52

难度系数 3.5

定语从句修饰 methods　*vt.* 使永久　动词作宾语　动词作状语

The methods that a community devises to perpetuate itself come into being to preserve aspects

n. 遗产　定语从句修饰 legacy，that 所指代的先行词 legacy 在从句中作宾语，理论上可以省略，但实际不能省，因为省略后读者不会把第二个 that 认为是指示词，引起歧义。

of the cultural legacy that that community perceives as essential.

形容词修饰 community，指示前文的 a community　介词短语作补语

句子翻译

为了保存这个社会认为重要的文化遗产的各个方面，社会创造出来为了让它自身维系下去的方法得以形成。

必杀句 53

难度系数 3.5

副词作状语　定语从句修饰 those　介词短语作状语

Yet those who stress the achievement of a general consensus among the colonists cannot fully understand

形容词修饰 consensus，指示前文的 general consensus。

that consensus without understanding the conflicts that had to be overcome or repressed in order to reach it.

介词短语作状语。中文翻译时整个状语部分要提前。　定语从句修饰 conflicts　代词指代 consensus

句子翻译

然而，强调殖民者之间达成普遍一致意见这一功绩的历史学家，如果不懂得为了达成它必须克服或压制的冲突，就无法充分理解这一一致意见。

难句解析

此句的中文翻译特别重要，状语前置，请注意完全倒过来的语序。

必杀句 54

难度系数 3.5

动词作状语　定语从句修饰 world，in which 在从句中作状语。　*n.* 欺骗　*n.* 乱，无政府状态

Living in a world in which undeclared aggression, war, hypocrisy, chicanery, anarchy, and

n. 牺牲，祭品　*n.* 虚伪

impending immolation are part of our daily lives, we all need a code to live by.

adj. 即将发生的，迫在眉睫的　动词作定语修饰 code

句子翻译

生活在一个不宣而战的侵略、战争、虚伪、诈骗、混乱以及迫在眉睫的杀戮充斥着我们日常生活的世界里，我们都需要一个赖以生存的准则。

必杀句 55

难度系数 3.5

介词短语作状语　n. 乳酸　形容词作补语　介词短语作状语　动词作状语

With the conclusion of a burst activity, the lactic acid level is high in the body fluids, leaving the

形容词作补语　介词短语作状语　连词　介词短语作状语　n. 新陈代谢　介词短语作状语

large animal vulnerable to attack until the acid is reconverted, via oxidative metabolism, by the

adj. 易受伤害的　adj. 氧化的　n. 再合成

liver into glucose, which is then sent (in part) back to the muscles for glycogen resynthesis.

n. 葡萄糖　定语从句修饰 glucose。关系从句，对最近的名词补充说明。　n. 糖元

句子翻译

随着突然增加的运动结束，体液中乳酸含量急剧升高，使得大型动物容易受到攻击，直到乳酸通过氧化代谢经过肝脏转化成葡萄糖，这些葡萄糖接下来又会部分传送回肌肉中进行糖元再合成。

必杀句 56

难度系数 4.0

动词作状语　动词作定语修饰 evolution

Coinciding with the groundbreaking theory of biological evolution proposed by British naturalist

Charles Darwin in the 1860s, British social philosopher Herbert Spencer put forward his own

同位语从句解释 theory

theory of biological and cultural evolution that all worldly phenomena, including human societies,

动词作状语，和主语的关系是主动，和谓语动词是同时发生。

changed over time, advancing toward perfection.

句子翻译

与十九世纪六十年代英国博物学家达尔文所提出的创造性的生物进化论同一时期的是，英国社会哲学家赫伯特·斯宾塞也提出了自己的生物与文化进化理论，即所有世俗的现象，包括人类社会，都随着时间的推移进化至完美。

背景知识

赫伯特·斯宾塞（Herbert Spencer，1820–1903），英国哲学家。他被公认为“社会达尔文主义之父”，他提出一套学说把进化理论，即“适者生存”应用到社会学上尤其是教育及阶级斗争。

必杀句 57

难度系数 4.0

adj. 水文的　名词作同位语解释 cycle　定语从句修饰 phenomena

The hydrologic cycle, a major topic in this science, is the complete cycle of phenomena through

动词作状语　动词作状语　介词短语作状语

which water passes, beginning as atmospheric water vapor, passing into liquid and solid form as

n. 沉淀；降雨　adv. 然后，因此　along 和 into 介词短语作状语并列　动词作状语

precipitation, thence along and into the ground surface, and finally again returning to the form of

n. 蒸发　n. 散发

atmospheric water vapor by means of evaporation and transpiration.

句子翻译

水文循环作为该学科的主要课题，指的是水经过的各种现象的整个循环，开始是大气中的水蒸气，然后通过液体和固体形式的降水，沿着并进入地层表面，最终通过蒸发和散发再次变为大气中的水蒸气。

难句解析

此句出现了带介词的定语从句 through which water passes，还有并列的动词状语 beginning、passing、returning。

必杀句 58

难度系数 3.9

强调句，要预判它是强调句而非形式主语，详细讲解请参见第二章第五节《图穷匕见，一眼看透托福难句》练习 9。

It is the demand of individual consumers, coupled with the desire of businessmen to maximize

动词作状语　动词作定语修饰 desire

profits and the desire of individuals to maximize their incomes, that together determine what shall

动词作定语修饰 desire　副词作状语修饰 determine　宾语从句

be produced and how resources are used to produce it.

what 和 how 引导的宾语从句并列　代词指代 what 引导的宾语从句

句子翻译

正是个体消费者的需求，同时和商人企图最大化其利润的欲望以及个人企图最大化其收入的欲望相结合共同决定了什么应该被制造，以及如何利用资源来制造它们。

必杀句 59

难度系数 4.0

状语从句。同必杀句 13，不要因为状语太长忘了主句更重要的语感，主句前应该有对应中文“但是”的语感。

Although some experiments show that, as an object becomes familiar, its internal representation becomes

形容词作补语　宾语从句　状语从句　形容词作补语　意为“权重”，类似于数学里的加权平均

more holistic and the recognition process correspondingly more parallel, the weight of evidence seems to

adj. 整体的　its internal representation becomes more holistic 和 process correspondingly more parallel 宾语从句并列，后者省略了相同的谓语动词 becomes。

support the serial hypothesis, at least for objects that are not notably simple and familiar.

动词作补语　介词短语作状语　介词短语作状语　定语从句修饰 objects

句子翻译

随着一个物体变得熟悉，尽管某些实验表明其内心展现更具整体感，认知过程相应地更趋于平行，但证据的权重似乎在支持序列假设，至少对于不那么简单、不那么熟悉的物体来说是这样。

难句解析

此句重点是并列关系，as 引导状语从句，that 宾语从句包括两个部分，一个是 internal representation，另一个是 recognition process，同时伴随省略，此处容易看错。

必杀句 60

难度系数 4.5

连词　状语从句

Unless they succeed, the yield gains of the Green Revolution will be largely lost even if the genes in

n. 豆科植物　定语从句修饰 genes，此定语从句较长，需要特别注意。

legumes that equip those plants to enter into a symbiosis with nitrogen fixers are identified and isolated,

动词作补语　*n.* 共生

and even if the transfer of those gene complexes, once they are found, becomes possible.

两个 even if 引导的状语从句并列　连词，相当于 as soon as　形容词作补语

句子翻译

除非他们取得成功，不然绿色革命的成果将在很大程度上损失殆尽，即使豆科植物中使植物与固氮细菌形成共生关系的基因能被辨识和隔离，而且即使这些一旦被发现的基因综合体的移植成为可能。

背景知识

绿色革命（Green Revolution）指的是在生态学和环境科学基本理论的指导下，人类适应环境，与环境协同发展、和谐共进所创造的一切文化和活动。很长一段时间后，绿色革命暴露了其局限性，主要是导致化肥、农药的大量使用和土壤退化。

必杀句 61

难度系数 3.0

状语从句　定语从句修饰 settings

These plants are termed opportunists because they rely on their seeds' falling into settings where

介词短语作状语　介词短语作定语修饰 settings

competing plants have been removed by natural processes, such as along an eroding riverbank,

介词短语作定语修饰 settings　并列的定语从句修饰 settings　*n.* 顶棚，华盖

on landslips, or where a tree falls and creates a gap in the forest canopy.

句子翻译

这些植物被称为机会主义者是因为它们的繁衍依靠其种子落入竞争者已经被大自然淘汰的地方，如被侵蚀了的河岸、山崩之处或在树木倒下并在森林冠层中形成间隙的地方。

难句解析

最后 along、on、where 三个并列部分都和前面的 where 一样作定语修饰 settings，表示列举，根据原则五，并列结构非常对称。

必杀句 62

难度系数 4.5

状语从句，同必杀句 13 和 59，较远的主句更重要。　状语从句　代词指代 grains

Because the potential hazards pollen grains are subject to as they are transported over long distances

动词作定语修饰 plants　省略 that 的定语从句修饰 hazards　动词作定语修饰 loss。ensuing 强调因果关系的随之发生，而 following 是普通的时间先后。

are enormous, wind pollinated plants have, in the view above, compensated for the ensuing loss of

vt. 授粉　介词短语作状语。请注意插入语的位置，放在了 have compensated for 的中间，明显是想强调 have，助动词 have 给人“已经”的感觉。

pollen through happenstance by virtue of producing an amount of pollen that is one to three orders of

介词短语作状语　介词短语作状语　定语从句修饰 pollen

magnitude greater than the amount produced by species pollinated by insects.

动词作定语修饰 amount (of pollen)　动词作定语修饰 species

句子翻译

因为在长距离传播中花粉粒所遭遇的潜在危险是巨大的，依照上述观点，风媒授粉植物通过产生多

于昆虫授粉植物一至三个等级的花粉量补偿了通过偶发事件随之造成的花粉损失。

必杀句 63

难度系数 4.5

预判后面有 but　名词从句　　v. 使变硬　状语从句，括号插入语更加独立于原文

This is not because such an interpretation necessarily stiffens into a thesis (although rigidity in any interpretation of this or of any novel is always a danger), but because *Wuthering Heights* has recalcitrant elements of undeniable power that, ultimately, resist inclusion in an all-encompassing interpretation.

两个 because 引导的名词从句并列　　adj. 倔强的，顽抗的，拒不服从的

定语从句修饰 power

句子翻译

这不是因为这样一种解释必定会僵化成一个命题（尽管对这部或任何一部小说的解释的僵化总是一种危险），而是因为《呼啸山庄》拥有一些不可否认的力量的难以驾驭的要素，这种力量最终拒绝被包括在一个囊括一切的解释当中。

难句解析

此句逻辑不好懂，括号中状语从句是让步，意为“导致这样的结果不是因为 A（尽管 A 有可能导致这样的结果），而是因为 B”，使得表述更为完备。类似于这样的逻辑：“我选择这所美国大学不是因为她排名靠前，尽管靠前的排名是很多学生选择她的理由，而是因为她有最好的学术氛围和自由思想。”

背景知识

《呼啸山庄》是英国女作家勃朗特三姐妹之一艾米莉·勃朗特（Emily Jane Bronte，1818–1848）的作品，是十九世纪英国文学代表作之一。小说描写吉卜赛弃儿希斯克利夫被山庄老主人收养后，因受辱和恋爱不遂，外出致富回来后对与其女友凯瑟琳结婚的地主林顿及其子女进行报复的故事。全篇充满强烈的反压迫的斗争精神又始终笼罩着离奇、紧张的浪漫气氛，被多次改编成电影作品。

必杀句 64

难度系数 5.0

谓语动词意为“害怕”，形容词 dreadful 意为“可怕的”　状语从句。　定语从句修饰 argument　状语从句，意为“当且仅当”。

The physicist rightly dreads precise argument, since an argument that is convincing only if it is precise loses all its force if the assumptions on which it is based are slightly changed, whereas an argument that is convincing though imprecise may well be stable under small perturbations of its underlying assumptions.

状语从句　　定语从句修饰 assumptions　　代词指代 argument

代词指代 argument　　连词　定语从句修饰 argument

状语从句　副词作状语修饰 be　介词短语作状语　n. 小变化

句子翻译

物理学家惧怕那些精确无误的论据情有可原，因为在且仅在它自身精确的情况下才令人信服的论据只要论据所基于的假设稍有变化便会不成立，然而一个不那么精确的有说服力的论据在其基本假设稍微变动的情况下仍然可能站得住脚。

难句解析

1. whereas 连接的两个并列句写得很好，用近义词完全避免重复，用 under 对应 if，用 small perturbations 对应 slightly changed，用 underlying 对应 on which it is based。
2. 受过高等教育的人因为思维复杂，喜欢将很多信息放在一个句子里说出来，并列成分会很多。比如笔者从网络上找到的中文长难句："高度自律的人不会出轨，并不一定完全因为他们的伴侣会对他们失望或者他们会打输离婚官司，也可能因为他们觉得家庭和睦更有价值，或者只应付一个伴侣更省事，或者世界上有远比出轨有意思得多的事自己还没玩过来。"让外国人读肯定觉得作者思维复杂。

必杀句 65

难度系数 4.5

介词短语作补语　预判后面有 than　状语从句　代词指代 anthropologists

Anthropologists and others are on much firmer ground when they attempt to describe the cultural

介词短语作定语修饰 norms　状语从句　*adj.* 可怕的

norms for a small homogeneous tribe or village than when they undertake the formidable task of discovering

adj. 同类的　连词，两个 when 引导的状语从句并列

the norms that exist in a complex modern nation state composed of many disparate groups.

定语从句修饰 norms　动词作定语修饰 state　*adj.* 完全不同的

句子翻译

相比当人类学家从事揭示存在于一个由许多完全不同的群体构成的复杂现代民族国家的文化标准这一艰巨任务时，当他们试图描述一个同类型小部落或村庄的文化标准时更加理直气壮。

难句解析

此句第一个 when 之前是主干，两个 when 引导的状语从句非常长，所以中文语序要完全颠倒，视译这个句子极难，需要重点关注此句的中文翻译。笔者在讲课中经常让学生口译难句，如果学生视译很流利，说明读得很懂，如果中文不通顺但还是说出来了，说明读懂了，中文说不出来说明没读懂。请读者注意自己能否流利视译句子，说明阅读水平是否游刃有余。

第五节　百句精练

典型例句

S$_1$ Other theorists propose that the Moon was ripped out of the Earth's rocky mantle by the Earth's collision with another large celestial body after much of the Earth's iron fell to its core.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_2$ The isotopic composition of lead often varies from one source of common copper ore to another, with variations exceeding the measurement error; and preliminary studies indicate virtually uniform isotopic composition of the lead from a single copper–ore source.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_3$ For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_4$ But the message that everyone must screen for cancer has become so deep–rooted that when health care experts recommended that women under 50 and over 74 stop screening for breast cancer, it caused a riotous reaction among doctors, patients and advocacy groups.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_5$ Apparently most massive stars manage to lose sufficient material that their masses drop below the critical value of 1.4M before they exhaust their nuclear fuel.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_6$ Taste is such a subjective matter that we don't usually conduct preference tests for food.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_7$ Americans give too much importance to individualism and personal gains, so much so that it might sacrifice collective benefits.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_8$ She suffers from a constant lack of energy so much so that she had to give up her job in catering ten years ago.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_9$ Since the laws of physics, not some arbitrary decision, have determined the general form of applied–art objects, they follow basic patterns, so much so that functional forms can vary only within certain limits.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{10}$ The temperature increased dramatically in a short period of time (years rather than centuries), allowing for a growth of the hunting–gathering population due to the abundance of resources.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{11}$ Hallucinogens have their primary effect on perception, distorting and altering it in a variety of ways including producing hallucinations.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{12}$ Growing tightly packed together and collectively weaving a dense canopy of branches, a stand of red alder trees can totally dominate a site to the exclusion of almost everything else.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{13}$ Hills and mountains are often regarded as the epitome of permanence, successfully resisting the destructive forces of nature, but in fact they tend to be relatively short–lived in geological terms.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{14}$ Glaciers move slowly across the land with tremendous energy, carving into even the hardest rock formations and thereby reshaping the landscape as they engulf, push, drag, and finally deposit rock debris in places far from its original location.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{15}$ These researchers have sought to demonstrate that their work can be a valuable tool not only of science but also of history, providing fresh insights into the daily lives of ordinary people whose existences might not otherwise be so well documented.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{16}$ Now we must also examine the culture as we Mexican Americans have experienced it, passing from a sovereign people to compatriots with newly arriving settlers to, finally, a conquered people — a charter minority on our own land.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{17}$ An education that aims at getting a student a certain kind of job is a technical education, justified for reasons radically different from why compulsory education is universally required by law.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{18}$ Totally without light and subjected to intense pressures hundreds of times greater than at the Earth's surface, the deep–ocean bottom is a hostile environment to humans, in some ways as forbidding and remote as the void of outer space.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{19}$ In textile areas it has long been customary for mothers to go out to work, but this practice has become so widespread that the working mother is now a not unusual factor in a child's home life, the number of married women in employment having more than doubled in the last twenty–five years.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{20} Women are particularly susceptible to developing depression and anxiety disorders in response to stress compared to men.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{21} Furthermore, humans have the capacity to modify the environment in which they live thus subjecting all other life forms to their own peculiar ideas and fancies.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

必杀句 51 ～ 65

S_{51} In addition to having to be a generalist while specializing in what may seem to be a narrow field, the researcher is faced with the problem of primary materials that have little or no documentation.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{52} The methods that a community devises to perpetuate itself come into being to preserve aspects of the cultural legacy that that community perceives as essential.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{53} Yet those who stress the achievement of a general consensus among the colonists cannot fully understand that consensus without understanding the conflicts that had to be overcome or repressed in order to reach it.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{54} Living in a world in which undeclared aggression, war, hypocrisy, chicanery, anarchy, and impending immolation are part of our daily lives, we all need a code to live by.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{55} With the conclusion of a burst activity, the lactic acid level is high in the body fluids, leaving the large animal vulnerable to attack until the acid is reconverted, via oxidative metabolism, by the liver into glucose, which is then sent (in part) back to the muscles for glycogen resynthesis.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{56} Coinciding with the groundbreaking theory of biological evolution proposed by British naturalist Charles Darwin in the 1860s, British social philosopher Herbert Spencer put forward his own theory of biological and cultural evolution that all worldly phenomena, including human societies, changed over time, advancing toward perfection.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{57} The hydrologic cycle, a major topic in this science, is the complete cycle of phenomena through which water passes, beginning as atmospheric water vapor, passing into liquid and solid form as precipitation, thence along and into the ground surface, and finally again returning to the form of atmospheric water vapor by means of evaporation and transpiration.

精读遍数： ❑

S58 It is the demand of individual consumers, coupled with the desire of businessmen to maximize profits and the desire of individuals to maximize their incomes, that together determine what shall be produced and how resources are used to produce it.

精读遍数： ❑

S59 Although some experiments show that, as an object becomes familiar, its internal representation becomes more holistic and the recognition process correspondingly more parallel, the weight of evidence seems to support the serial hypothesis, at least for objects that are not notably simple and familiar.

精读遍数： ❑

S60 Unless they succeed, the yield gains of the Green Revolution will be largely lost even if the genes in legumes that equip those plants to enter into a symbiosis with nitrogen fixers are identified and isolated, and even if the transfer of those gene complexes, once they are found, becomes possible.

精读遍数： ❑

S61 These plants are termed opportunists because they rely on their seeds' falling into settings where competing plants have been removed by natural processes, such as along an eroding riverbank, on landslips, or where a tree falls and creates a gap in the forest canopy.

精读遍数： ❑

S62 Because the potential hazards pollen grains are subject to as they are transported over long distances are enormous, wind pollinated plants have, in the view above, compensated for the ensuing loss of pollen through happenstance by virtue of producing an amount of pollen that is one to three orders of magnitude greater than the amount produced by species pollinated by insects.

精读遍数： ❑

S63 This is not because such an interpretation necessarily stiffens into a thesis (although rigidity in any interpretation of this or of any novel is always a danger), but because *Wuthering Heights* has recalcitrant elements of undeniable power that, ultimately, resist inclusion in an all–encompassing interpretation.

精读遍数： ❑

S64 The physicist rightly dreads precise argument, since an argument that is convincing only if it is precise loses all its force if the assumptions on which it is based are slightly changed, whereas an argument that is convincing though imprecise may well be stable under small perturbations of its underlying assumptions.

精读遍数： ❑

S65 Anthropologists and others are on much firmer ground when they attempt to describe the cultural norms for a small homogeneous tribe or village than when they undertake the formidable task of discovering the norms that exist in a complex modern nation state composed of many disparate groups.

精读遍数： ❑

第七章

心无旁骛——如何不被插入语打扰

必杀句 64 中提到受教育程度高的人运用语言时往往同一时刻想表达更多内容，再加上用词正式，写的句子往往较长。同时他们行文还有一个特点，就是经常使用插入语，有增加行文美观和强调前置内容两个目的。试比较：

I guess the newcomer must be Mr. Andrew.

The newcomer, I guess, must be Mr. Andrew.

前者将 I guess 置于句首引导宾语从句，结构紧凑；后者将 I guess 作为插入语置于句中，阅读起来有停顿和缓冲，美感比前者强。

再比如：

adj. 正直的；正义的　*n.* 愤怒　*n.* 独占的事物

Feelings of righteous indignation, it seems, are not the preserve of people alone.

插入其中就是为了表示不确定性，和谓语动词 are 表示确定放在一起形成反差，比写成并列句好得多。

翻译：义愤填膺的情感看来不是人类独有。

Behind many successful men there is, more often than not, a woman who makes this success possible.

意为“经常”　形容词作补语

翻译：很多成功男人的背后往往都有一位助他一臂之力的女人。

笔者不同意一些老师主张的“插入语跳过不读”的方法，因为专心阅读的时候不可能去想哪些跳过哪些不跳过。阅读都是从左到右，如果需要倒回来肯定出问题了，而且插入语较长的情况下我们根本分不清到底是插入语前后逗号还是普通逗号。所以有些老师是读完插入语以后才说可以不读的。

正确的做法是反复读熟最难的插入语句子，练就不管什么插入语都去读但是读得很快的能力，读与不读相差一两秒，就无所谓了。只有括号表示插入语的时候可以跳过不读，因为括号总是成对出现。

典型例句分析

形容词作定语修饰 evidence　介词短语作状语　并列句，前后同等重要

1 Scientists have no direct evidence for recent or ongoing eruptions, but if these volcanoes were

状语从句，更重要的主句是 some of them may still be active，同必杀句 13、59、62，不要因为 if 引导的从句很长再加上括号插入语而忽略了主句。

active as recently as 100 million years ago (an estimate of the time of last eruption based on the

括号插入语的核心词，名词作同位语解释 100 million years

extent of impact cratering on their slopes), some of them may still be at least intermittently active.

句子翻译

科学家对于最近的或正在进行的火山喷发没有直接证据，但是如果火山现在的活跃程度和一亿年前一样（这一最近的爆发期是根据火山斜坡上陨石坑的范围估算出来的），他们中的一些现在仍然间歇性活跃。

第一节　插入语前置如何破?

插入语之所以称为插入语，是因为它脱离了本来的位置，阅读时需要体会作者为什么刻意提前。

典型例句分析

2

A man, as a general rule, owes very little to what he is born with — a man is what he makes of himself.

插入语是状语，本来的位置在句首或句尾。

句子翻译

一般而言，天生的能力对人的一生影响不大，后天的造就则影响巨大。

of、by、for 都是并列的结构，通过插入语并在一起，行文美观。此种用法源于林肯总统的葛底斯堡演说："...government of the people by the people for the people, shall not perish from the earth"。

3

What we today call American folk art was, indeed, art of, by, and for ordinary, everyday "folks" who, with increasing prosperity and leisure, created a market for art of all kinds and especially for portraits.

主语从句

定语从句修饰 folks

句子翻译

我们今天认为的美国民间艺术确实是被普通民众所有、所创和所享的艺术，随着日渐繁荣和不断增加的休闲时间，这些普通民众为各种艺术尤其是肖像艺术创造了一个市场。

4

adj. 本质的，实质的

On the other hand, when it comes to substantive — particularly behavioral — information, crows are less well known than many comparably common species and, for that matter, not a few quite uncommon ones: the endangered California condor, to cite one obvious example.

预判后面有 than

many comparably common species 和 a few quite uncommon ones 并列

插入语是状语，表示原因，意为"正因为不如前者为人所知，也不如后者为人所知"。

此处有省略，补全后是 not well known than a few quite uncommon ones。

n. 加利福尼亚秃鹫

动词作状语

句子翻译

另一方面，当涉及实质性的尤其是行为方面的信息时，乌鸦就不如许多比较而言很普通的鸟类那样为人所知，正因为如此也不如一些很不寻常的鸟类，一个明显的例子，不如像濒危的加利福尼亚秃鹫那样为人所知。

5

Americans no longer anticipate public figures, whether in speech or in writing, to command the English language with skill and gift. Nor do they aspire to such command themselves.

插入语是状语，本来的位置在句尾

动词作补语

句子翻译

美国人已不再期待公众人物在演讲或写作中能运用技巧和文采来驾驭英语，同时他们也不渴望自己熟练驾驭。

6

Rent controls were spurred by the inflation of the 1970's, which, combined with California's rapid population growth, pushed housing prices, as well as rents, to record levels.

动词作状语。该插入语提前到 which 引导的定语从句中，强调“一起推动”，本来应该出现在句尾。

n./v. 刺激

定语从句修饰 inflation

句子翻译

房租管制被二十世纪七十年代的通货膨胀刺激，该通货膨胀与加利福尼亚人口的迅速增长一起，共同将房价和租金推到创纪录的水平。

7

Moreover, I can feel strong emotions in response to objects of art that are interpretations, rather than representations, of reality.

介词短语作定语修饰 emotions

定语从句修饰 art

插入语是状语，将 representations 提前到和 interpretations 一起产生强烈对比。正常的语序是 that are interpretations of reality rather than representations of reality。

介词短语作定语修饰 interpretations 和 representations

句子翻译

而且，我能感觉对于艺术品的强烈的情感，这些艺术品是对现实的解释，而不是对现实的表现。

8

Max Roach is regarded as a progenitor of modern jazz drumming because he was one of the first artists to exploit the melodic, rather than merely rhythmic, possibilities of his instrument.

n. 先驱；祖先

插入语是定语，位置特点同上句

句子翻译

麦克斯·罗奇被誉为现代爵士鼓音乐的先驱，因为他是最先探索乐器旋律的艺术家之一，而不是仅仅停留在乐器的节奏上。

第二节　使逻辑更加完备的插入语如何破？

插入语另外一个功能是让逻辑更加完整，经常以让步形式出现。让步关系是转折关系的一种，它的独特之处是先承认对方有道理然后再转折，而普通转折关系是直接转折。此种用法的最难句是后文必杀句 74 至 77。请体会以下表示让步的插入语为什么必须放在句子中间。

典型例句分析

9

Disillusionment with the parents, however good and adequate they may be both as parents and as individuals, is to some degree inevitable.

n. 幻灭　介词短语作状语　形容词作补语

句子翻译

父母亲作为家长或个人不管多么好、多么合格，孩子对他们幻想的破灭在某种程度上是不可避免的。

10

It has thus generally been by way of the emphasis on oral literary creativity that these writers, whose English language works are sometimes uninspired, developed the powerful and arresting language that characterized their Spanish-language works.

形式主语　副词作状语　副词作状语修饰 been　介词短语作状语　介词短语作定语修饰 emphasis　主语从句

插入语是定语从句修饰 writers，请体会 whose 表示所属关系“……的”。　定语从句修饰 language

句子翻译

因此，这些英语作品有时显得枯燥的作家建立了一种强有力、富于吸引力并表现了西班牙语作品特征的语言，通过对口头文学创造力的强调得以普遍形成。

难句解析

此句主语非常长，主语从句从 these writers 开始到 works 结束，谓语动词是 has been。

11

介词短语作状语　介词短语作补语

Atomic power is associated in the public mind with the destructive force of atom bombs and

介词短语作状语　状语从句　主语从句

partly for this reason, though it is claimed that there is no danger to be associated with atomic

形式主语，真正的主语是 that 引导的主语从句。　动词作定语修饰 danger

power stations, they are being sited away from populous centers.

句子翻译

在公众意识中原子能经常与原子弹的破坏力联系在一起，部分由于该原因，尽管人们宣称不存在与核电站相关的危险，这些核电站的选址都远离人口中心。

12

adj. 怀疑的　状语从句　定语从句修饰 things

This is a skeptical age, but although our faith in many of the things in which our forefathers

adv. 热情地　*adj.* 治愈的，治疗的

fervently believed has weakened, our confidence in the curative properties of the bottle of

介词短语作状语

medicine remains the same as theirs.

句子翻译

这是一个疑心重重的时代，尽管我们对祖先所笃信的很多事物已经不再相信，但是我们对瓶装药物疗效的信心却仍与祖辈一样坚定。

第三节　百句练兵突破长插入语（必杀句 66 ～ 77）

必杀句 66

难度系数 4.0

状语从句，同前文必杀句 13、59，从句太长常常导致忽略主句。　定语从句修饰 wavelengths

Although these molecules allow radiation at visible wavelengths, where most of the energy of sunlight

动词作补语　介词短语作定语修饰 radiation　名词作定语修饰 radiation。此处尤其要注意，不要被插入语打扰。

is concentrated, to pass through, they absorb some of the longer-wavelength, infrared emissions

副词作状语修饰 pass　代词指代 molecules　名词作前置同位语解释 radiation

radiated from the Earth's surface, radiation that would otherwise be transmitted back into space.

动词作定语修饰 emissions　定语从句修饰 radiation　副词作状语

句子翻译

虽然这些分子允许可见波长的辐射——阳光绝大部分能量汇集于此——不受阻挡地穿透，但它们却会吸收某些较长波长的辐射，即从地球表面辐射的红外辐射，如果不被吸收，这种辐射本会传回外太空。

难句解析

1. 此句两处插入语，首先是 where 引导的定语从句，然后是 infrared emissions 前置的同位语，最后还有一个关系从句补充说明 longer-wavelength radiation。

2. 请读者思考此句最后 that 前的 radiation 为什么不放到 longer-wavelength 一起？也就是 emissions 同位语插入语为何采取前置而不是正常出现在 longer-wavelength radiation 之后？答案请在原则七中找。

必杀句 67

难度系数 4.0

It was not the change in office technology, but rather the separation of secretarial work,

强调句　预判后面有 but　副词作状语

previously seen as an apprenticeship for beginning managers, from administrative work that in

动词作定语修饰 secretarial work　*n.* 学徒身份，学徒期　副词作状语修饰 considered　动词作定语修饰 jobs

the 1880's created a new class of "dead-end" jobs, thenceforth considered "women's work".

句子翻译

在十九世纪八十年代产生了新的一类“没前途”的并且后来被认为是“女性的工作”的职业，这不是因为办公技术的改变，而是因为秘书工作从行政工作中分离开来，这些秘书工作之前被视为经理人的初始训练。

必杀句 68

难度系数 3.0

动词作补语　定语从句修饰 case histories

Historians such as Roy have used the documents to extract case histories, which have illuminated

vt. 提取，拔出　*vt.* 照亮；阐明

the attitudes of different social groups (these attitudes include, but are not confined to, attitudes

have illuminated 和 have revealed 谓语动词并列　宾语从句，how 在从句中作状语

toward crime and the law) and have revealed how the authorities administered justice.

句子翻译

像罗伊一类的历史学家用文献资料挖掘案例史，这些案例史阐明了不同社会群体的态度（这些态度包括但不限于对犯罪和法律的态度），还揭示了当局是如何司法的。

难句解析

请注意括号插入语中 include, but are not confined to 的表达。

必杀句 69

难度系数 4.0

形式主语　形容词作补语　主语从句　*n.* 修辞学　预判后面有 to

Under the force of this view, it was perhaps inevitable that the art of rhetoric should pass from the

介词短语作定语修饰 status，being 是名词化的动词。　介词短语作补语，of worth 相当于 worthy。　代词指代 art of rhetoric

status of being regarded as of questionable worth (because although it might be both a source of

插入语是状语从句　状语从句中嵌套的状语从句，表示让步。

pleasure and a means to urge people to right action, it might also be a means to distort truth and

介词短语作定语修饰 status，being 是名词化的动词。　*vt.* 谴责　*v.* 歪曲，扭曲

a source of misguided action) to the status of being wholly condemned.

句子翻译

在这种观点的影响下，修辞艺术从被认为有疑问的地位变为被彻底谴责的地位也许不可避免（因为它有可能既是歪曲真理的手段也是误导的来源，尽管它有可能既是快乐的来源也是促使人们到正确行为的方式）。

难句解析

此句括号插入语本来的位置是在句尾，这里放在句中，明显为了强调该插入语，迫不及待地说出使得逻辑完整。

必杀句 70

难度系数 3.5

The appreciation of traditional oral American Indian literature has been limited, hampered by poor translations and by the difficulty, even in the rare culturally sensitive and aesthetically satisfying translation, of completely conveying the original's verse structure, tone, and syntax.

by poor translations 和 by the difficulty 状语并列

介词短语作状语

副词作状语

介词短语作状语

adv. 美学上

介词短语作定语修饰 difficulty，conveying 是名词化的动词。

n. 句法

句子翻译

对美国印第安人传统口头文学的欣赏一直被低劣的翻译和对原作的诗体结构、语调和句法完全表达的困难所限制和妨碍，即使是那些少见的文学上敏感并且美学上令人满意的翻译也是如此。

难句解析

1. 此句状语插入语的位置值得推敲，意为“即使是在好的翻译当中”，正好和前文 poor translation 形成对比，把它和 difficulty 放在一起形成反差，如果放在 by the difficulty 之前就没有这层意思了。插入语的主要目的仍旧是让逻辑完整。

2. 主句的 has been limited 和 hampered 之间没有 and，如果写上 and 原文为了避免歧义就要写成 has been limited and has been hamered，稍显啰嗦。

必杀句 71

难度系数 3.5

With regard to this last question, we might note in passing that Thompson, while rightly restoring laboring people to the stage of eighteen-century English history, has probably exaggerated the opposition of these people to the inroads of capitalist consumerism in general: for example, laboring people in eighteen-century England readily shifted from home-brewed beer to standardized beer produced by huge, heavily capitalized urban breweries.

介词短语作状语

介词短语作状语

宾语从句

状语从句。让步关系，承认汤普森的功劳

介词短语作补语

n. 进展；侵袭

微妙动词(tricky verb)，即英语语序和翻译出来的中文语序非常不一样。比如“A contradict B”中文不说“A 矛盾 B”而说“A 与 B 相矛盾”。

预判后面有 to

n. 酿酒厂

句子翻译

关于最后这个问题，我们可以顺便指出，尽管汤普森正确地让劳动人民重返十八世纪英国的历史舞台，但是他很可能夸大了这些人对资本主义消费观发展的反对态度：例如，十八世纪英国劳动人民迅速地从自酿啤酒转向大型的、资本密集的城市酿酒厂生产的标准啤酒。

必杀句 72

难度系数 3.5

If she defines feminist criticism as objective and scientific — a valid, verifiable, intellectual method

状语从句

that anyone, whether man or woman, can perform — the definition not only precludes the critic–as–

定语从句修饰 method　预判后面有 but also　*vt*. 阻止，妨碍

artist approach, but may also impede accomplishment of the utilitarian political objectives of those

定语从句修饰 those　动词作宾语　*adj*. 功利的，功利主义的

who seek to change the academic establishment and its thinking, especially about sex roles.

句子翻译

如果她把女权主义的评论定义为客观的和科学性的——这是一个有效的、可验证的、理性的、无论男女都可操作的方法——那么这个定义不仅将作为艺术家的评论家的方法排除在外，而且还可能会阻碍那些寻求改变学术界的现状和思维方式特别是关于性别角色思维方式的人的功利性政治目标的履行。

必杀句 73

难度系数 3.5

What is particularly meaningful to anthropologists is the realization that although the materials

主语从句　形容词作补语　介词短语作状语　同位语从句解释 realization　状语从句

available to a society may to some extent limit or influence what it can do artistically, the materials

形容词作后置定语修饰 materials　宾语从句　代词指代 society

by no means determine what is done.

介词短语作状语，意为“绝不”。　宾语从句

句子翻译

对人类学家有特殊意义的是这样一种认识，即尽管一个社会能够得到的材料可能在一定程度上限制或影响它在艺术上的作为，但这些材料绝对不能决定该社会做的事情。

难句解析

此句状语插入语道理同必杀句 13、59、66，接下来的四个必杀句都具有该特点但是难度明显提升，关键是不被长插入语打断思维，还有体会插入语为何刻意提前。

必杀句 74

难度系数 4.0

These historians, however, have analyzed less fully the development of specifically feminist

副词作状语提前表示强调，同时宾语后置，参见第八章第三节《宾语后置现象如何破？》。

副词作定语修饰 feminist ideas 和 activities

ideas and activities during the same period. Furthermore, the ideological origins of feminism

介词短语作状语　副词作状语　副词作状语修饰状语从句

in the United States have been obscured because, even when historians did take into account

状语从句　状语从句　助动词强调谓语动词

those feminist ideas and activities occurring within the United States, they failed to recognize that

动词作定语修饰 ideas 和 activities　宾语从句

feminism was then a truly international movement actually centered in Europe.

副词作状语　省略 that 的定语从句修饰 movement

句子翻译

但是，这些历史学家没有充分分析同一时期具体的女权主义思想和运动的发展。更进一步，甚至当历史学家确确实实考虑到所有在美国国内发生的女权主义思想和运动时，美国女权主义意识形态的起源一直很模糊，因为他们没有认识到女权主义那时实际上确实是以欧洲为中心的国际运动。

必杀句 75

难度系数 5.0

Islamic law is a phenomenon so different from all other forms of law — notwithstanding, of course,

副词作状语修饰 different　形容词作后置定语修饰 phenomenon　副词作状语

a considerable and inevitable number of coincidences with one or the other of them as far as

破折号插入语的核心词　代词指代 Islamic law's　状语从句

subject matter and positive enactments are concerned — that its study is indispensable in order to

状语从句，描述的是 so different 的程度　动词作状语

appreciate adequately the full range of possible legal phenomena.

状语提前表示强调，同时宾语后置

句子翻译

伊斯兰法是一种如此不同于其他所有法律形式的现象——当然，尽管就主要内容和有积极意义的法规而言，伊斯兰法与其他法律形式里这种或那种形式存在着相当数量的难以避免的巧合——为了充分理解所有可能的法律现象的全部范围，以至于对它的研究不可或缺。

难句解析

以往 so…that… 句型是 that 状语从句特别长，而这个句子特别之处在于中间的长插入语表示让步。遇到这种表达要注意两点，一是不要被长插入语打扰，导致忘了前面的 so。二是体会作者完整的逻辑，破折号插入语意为“尽管有一些巧合”，就是说尽管有一些雷同之处，但仍旧两者非常不同，所以值得研究。作者的插入语表示让步，目的是不希望马上有反驳之声，中文也有类似的例子：“首先我想说的是口腔保护最重要的是意识，恒牙是你最重要也是最好用的一副牙齿（儿童牙科医生不许说话，保护乳牙当然也重要）。”括号句子的功能一样。

必杀句 76

难度系数 5.0

This doctrine has broadened the application of the Fourteenth Amendment to other, nonracial forms of discrimination, for while some justices have refused to find any legislative classification other than race to be constitutionally disfavored, most have been receptive to arguments that at least some nonracial discriminations, sexual discrimination in particular, are “suspect” and deserve this heightened scrutiny by the courts.

介词短语作补语

连词，表原因　状语从句，从句的谓语动词是 have refused。　动词作宾语

动词作补语　代词指代 most justices　定语从句修饰 arguments

n. 仔细观察，监督

句子翻译

这一法律原则扩展了宪法第十四条修正案的应用，使其适用于其他非种族形式的歧视，因为尽管一些法官拒不将除种族以外的立法分类裁定为违宪的，但绝大多数法官已经接受了这一观点，即至少某些非种族性质的歧视，特别是性别歧视，是“可疑的”并理应通过法庭获得这种更严格的监督。

必杀句 77

难度系数 5.0

The only arguable plea for capital punishment is the right of society to retribution in this world with the prospect of life in another, but since what used to seem to the great majority of civilized humanity the assurance of another life beyond the grave has come to seem to more and more people less certain, a feeling for the value of human life has become deeper and more widespread.

n. 恳求；辩护；托辞　*n.* 死刑　*n.* 惩罚，报应

状语从句　主语从句　介词短语作状语

名词作补语　介词短语作状语

形容词作补语

句子翻译

对死刑唯一有争议的辩护是社会拥有以来生为指望而在此生予以惩罚的权利，但由于大多数文明人越来越不确信坟墓之外的来生，因此对人生命价值的情感变得更加深刻和广泛。

第四节 百句精练

典型例句

S_1 Scientists have no direct evidence for recent or ongoing eruptions, but if these volcanoes were active as recently as 100 million years ago (an estimate of the time of last eruption based on the extent of impact cratering on their slopes), some of them may still be at least intermittently active.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_2 A man, as a general rule, owes very little to what he is born with — a man is what he makes of himself.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_3 What we today call American folk art was, indeed, art of, by, and for ordinary, everyday "folks" who, with increasing prosperity and leisure, created a market for art of all kinds and especially for portraits.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_4 On the other hand, when it comes to substantive — particularly behavioral — information, crows are less well known than many comparably common species and, for that matter, not a few quite uncommon ones: the endangered California condor, to cite one obvious example.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_5 Americans no longer anticipate public figures, whether in speech or in writing, to command the English language with skill and gift. Nor do they aspire to such command themselves.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_6 Rent controls were spurred by the inflation of the 1970's, which, combined with California's rapid population growth, pushed housing prices, as well as rents, to record levels.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_7 Moreover, I can feel strong emotions in response to objects of art that are interpretations, rather than representations, of reality.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_8 Max Roach is regarded as a progenitor of modern jazz drumming because he was one of the first artists to exploit the melodic, rather than merely rhythmic, possibilities of his instrument.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_9 Disillusionment with the parents, however good and adequate they may be both as parents and as individuals, is to some degree inevitable.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{10} It has thus generally been by way of the emphasis on oral literary creativity that these writers, whose English language works are sometimes uninspired, developed the powerful and arresting language that characterized their Spanish–language works.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{11} Atomic power is associated in the public mind with the destructive force of atom bombs and partly for this reason, though it is claimed that there is no danger to be associated with atomic power stations, they are being sited away from populous centers.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{12} This is a skeptical age, but although our faith in many of the things in which our forefathers fervently believed has weakened, our confidence in the curative properties of the bottle of medicine remains the same as theirs.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

必杀句 66 ～ 77

S_{66} Although these molecules allow radiation at visible wavelengths, where most of the energy of sunlight is concentrated, to pass through, they absorb some of the longer–wavelength, infrared emissions radiated from the Earth's surface, radiation that would otherwise be transmitted back into space.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{67} It was not the change in office technology, but rather the separation of secretarial work, previously seen as an apprenticeship for beginning managers, from administrative work that in the 1880's created a new class of "dead–end" jobs, thenceforth considered "women's work".

精读遍数： ❑

S_{68} Historians such as Roy have used the documents to extract case histories, which have illuminated the attitudes of different social groups (these attitudes include, but are not confined to, attitudes toward crime and the law) and have revealed how the authorities administered justice.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{69} Under the force of this view, it was perhaps inevitable that the art of rhetoric should pass from the status of being regarded as of questionable worth (because although it might be both a source of pleasure and a means to urge people to right action, it might also be a means to distort truth and a source of misguided action) to the status of being wholly condemned.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{70} The appreciation of traditional oral American Indian literature has been limited, hampered by poor translations and by the difficulty, even in the rare culturally sensitive and aesthetically satisfying translation, of completely conveying the original's verse structure, tone, and syntax.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{71} With regard to this last question, we might note in passing that Thompson, while rightly restoring laboring people to the stage of eighteen-century English history, has probably exaggerated the opposition of these people to the inroads of capitalist consumerism in general: for example, laboring people in eighteen-century England readily shifted from home-brewed beer to standardized beer produced by huge, heavily capitalized urban breweries.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{72} If she defines feminist criticism as objective and scientific — a valid, verifiable, intellectual method that anyone, whether man or woman, can perform — the definition not only precludes the critic-as-artist approach, but may also impede accomplishment of the utilitarian political objectives of those who seek to change the academic establishment and its thinking, especially about sex roles.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{73} What is particularly meaningful to anthropologists is the realization that although the materials available to a society may to some extent limit or influence what it can do artistically, the materials by no means determine what is done.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{74} These historians, however, have analyzed less fully the development of specifically feminist ideas and activities during the same period. Furthermore, the ideological origins of feminism in the United States have been obscured because, even when historians did take into account those feminist ideas and activities occurring within the United States, they failed to recognize that feminism was then a truly international movement actually centered in Europe.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{75} Islamic law is a phenomenon so different from all other forms of law-notwithstanding, of course, a considerable and inevitable number of coincidences with one or the other of them as far as subject matter and positive enactments are concerned — that its study is indispensable in order to appreciate adequately the full range of possible legal phenomena.

精读遍数： ❑

S76 This doctrine has broadened the application of the Fourteenth Amendment to other, nonracial forms of discrimination, for while some justices have refused to find any legislative classification other than race to be constitutionally disfavored, most have been receptive to arguments that at least some nonracial discriminations, sexual discrimination in particular, are "suspect" and deserve this heightened scrutiny by the courts.

精读遍数： ❑

S77 The only arguable plea for capital punishment is the right of society to retribution in this world with the prospect of life in another, but since what used to seem to the great majority of civilized humanity the assurance of another life beyond the grave has come to seem to more and more people less certain, a feeling for the value of human life has become deeper and more widespread.

精读遍数： ❑

第八章

返璞归真——特殊语序如何还原

根据原则四，英语中经常通过语序变化表示强调，所以用形式主语来强调谓语、宾语或补语；用形式宾语来强调主语或补语；用后置定语来强调被修饰的名词；用动词作状语前置来强调状语；用动词作状语后置来强调主谓，动词状语成为伴随状态；强调句和倒装句都用来强调提前的部分。

第一节　部分倒装如何破?

部分倒装是指将谓语的一部分如助动词或情态动词提到主语之前，谓语动词还是在主语之后。

典型例句分析

副词 only 经常用来强调，强调状语时主句需要部分倒装，即把情态动词提到主语之前，谓语动词仍旧在原来的位置上。

定语从句修饰 boundaries

介词短语作定语修饰 water

1 Only when a system possesses natural or artificial boundaries that associate the water within it the hydrologic cycle may the entire system properly be termed hydrogeological.

定语从句谓语动词，后面补语部分省略了 with，补全后是 associate the water with the hydrologic cycle，这样做的目的可能是为了避免和 within 发生重复。

代词指代 system

adj. 水文地质的

为了避免重复，省略了被修饰的名词 system。

句子翻译

只有当一个系统拥有自然或人为地把系统中的水和水循环联系起来的边界，整个系统才能被称之为水文地质学。

同上句，强调状语，引起部分倒装

2 Only in the case of the February Revolution do we lack a useful description of participants that might characterize it in the light of what social history has taught us about the process of revolutionary mobilization.

定语从句修饰 participants

代词指代 Revolution

介词短语作状语

名词从句，和 of 组成介词短语，what 在从句中作补语，从句部分是 social history has taught us what。

句子翻译

只有在二月革命的情况下，我们缺乏一种有用的关于参与者的描述，这些参与者可能按照社会历史关于革命动员过程所教会我们的来表现这场革命。

第二节　完全倒装如何破？

完全倒装是指将谓语动词全部置于主语之前。它在托福阅读中出现极多，凡是看到介词、形容词、doing 或 done 形式动词等不太可能作主语的词打头，很可能是完全倒装。

完全倒装的目的主要是为了强调，有时也为了有美感。例如：

The man's face that was so mobile is set now; gone is the light from his fine eyes.

此人之前表情丰富的面庞现在变得木然呆板，炯炯有神的眼神变得黯然失色。

典型例句分析

介词短语作补语提前，预判后面有 to。介词短语打头不可能作主语，正常语序是 A series of steps is from…to…。

3 From the demonstration of a principle to the marketing of products derived from that principle is often a long, involved series of steps.

动词作定语修饰 products

句子翻译

从原理的展示到基于该原理生产出的产品的上市销售，往往是一系列长期而又复杂的步骤。

介词短语作补语提前

4 Among the accomplishments of President Polk are the creation of an independent treasure, the establishment of lower tariffs, and the purchase of the Oregon territory.

句子翻译

财政独立、降低关税和购买俄勒冈州是波尔克总统的成就中最重要的三个。

背景知识

詹姆斯·诺克斯·波尔克（James Knox Polk，1795–1849），美国第 11 任总统，他在 1844 年大选僵局中异军突起，成为第一个黑马总统。在短短的四年任期内，完成了对选民的三个承诺：降低关税、恢复独立国库制、解决俄勒冈边界问题并取得加利福尼亚地区。把美国领土向北扩张到北纬 49° 线，向西扩张到太平洋，向南几乎兼并了墨西哥一半的领土，今天美国领土的四分之一由他取得。他每天工作 18 小时以上而且没有休闲活动，离开白宫三个月就病逝了，他被历史学家评为美国最勤奋、最有效率的总统。

介词短语作补语提前　定语从句修饰 seabirds　*adj.* 暴露在风中的

5 Among the species of seabirds that use the windswept cliffs of the Atlantic coast of Canada in the summer to mate, lay eggs, and rear their young are common murres, Atlantic puffins, black-legged kittiwakes, and northern gannets.

n. 普通海鸦　*n.* 大西洋海鹦鹉　*n.* 黑脚三趾鸥　*n.* 北部塘鹅

句子翻译

夏天在加拿大大西洋沿岸迎风的悬崖上交配、产卵并抚育后代的海鸟中有普通海鸦、大西洋海鹦鹉、黑脚三趾鸥和北部塘鹅。

形容词作补语提前

6 Typical of the grassland dwellers of the continent is the American antelope, or pronghorn.

n. 叉角羚

句子翻译

美洲羚羊，又称叉角羚，是该大陆典型的草原动物。

形容词作补语提前

7 Equally important is the fact that the execution of multiple-step tasks is accomplished in a series-parallel sequence.

同位语从句解释 fact

句子翻译

同样重要的一个事实是多步任务的执行是在一系列平行序列下完成的。

难句解析

从此例可以看出之所以选用完全倒装是因为主语的定语或同位语较长，如果按照正常语序会极大地削弱谓语之后内容的重要性。所以大部分的完全倒装都是为了强调提前的部分，还有一些完全倒装是为了避免歧义。

8 Basic to any understanding of Canada in the 20 years after the Second World War is the country's impressive population growth.

形容词作补语提前

句子翻译

要理解第二次世界大战之后 20 年的加拿大，就必须了解该国惊人的人口增长。

9 More difficult is discerning precisely how these lean times are affecting society's character.

v. 辨别

动词作主语　宾语从句，how 在从句中作状语

句子翻译

更困难的是精确辨别这些不宽裕的时代正在如何影响社会性格。

10 More probable is bird transport, either externally, by accidental attachment of the seeds to feathers, or internally, by the swallowing of fruit and subsequent excretion of the seeds.

形容词作补语提前

n. 排泄

句子翻译

更可能的是鸟类的运输：要么是外部途径，即通过种子偶然粘附在羽毛上；要么是内部途径，即通过吞食果子然后将种子排泄出来。

11 Most striking among the many asymmetries evident in an adult flatfish is eye placement: before maturity one eye migrates, so that in an adult flatfish both eyes are on the same side of the head.

形容词作补语提前　形容词作后置定语修饰 asymmetries

连词

句子翻译

在成年比目鱼身上明显存在的诸多不对称中，最引人注目的是眼睛的位置：幼年时一只眼睛开始移动，因此成年比目鱼身上两只眼睛均位于头部的同一侧面。

介词短语作状语　定语从句修饰 changes

12 Of all the changes that have taken place in English-language newspapers during the past quarter-century, perhaps the most far-reaching has been the inexorable decline in the scope and seriousness of their arts coverage.

形容词作补语提前　*adj.* 无情的　介词短语作定语修饰 scope 和 seriousness　介词短语作定语修饰 decline

句子翻译

在过去 25 年英文报纸发生的所有变化里，可能影响最深远的是艺术方面新闻覆盖率在范围和重要性上无法阻挡的衰退。

介词短语作状语　*n.* 磁气圈　动词作补语提前　*n.* 等离子体

13 Outside the magnetosphere, blasting toward the Earth is the solar wind, a swiftly moving plasma of ionized gases with its own magnetic field.

v. 电离　名词作同位语解释 solar wind　动词作定语修饰 gases

句子翻译

在磁气圈的外围，太阳风暴快速袭向地球，它是一个有自身磁场并由电离化气团构成的迅速移动的等离子体。

动词作补语提前　形容词作后置定语修饰 fossils

14 Missing until recently were fossils clearly intermediate, or transitional, between land mammals and cetaceans.

n. 鲸目动物　形容词作后置定语修饰 fossils

句子翻译

在此之前一直缺乏陆地哺乳动物和鲸目动物之间明显的中间或过渡化石。

15 Matching the influx of foreign immigrants into larger cities of the United States during the late nineteenth century was a domestic migration, from town and farm to city, within the United States.

动词作补语提前

句子翻译

19 世纪晚期与国外移民流入美国大型城市相媲美的是美国国内从小镇和乡村向城市的本土的迁移。

16 Accompanying that growth was a structural change that featured increasing economic diversification and a gradual shift in the nation's labor force from agriculture to manufacturing and other nonagricultural pursuits.

动词作补语提前

定语从句修饰 change

句子翻译

伴随这一增长的是结构变化，该变化以经济的不断多样化和国家劳动力从农业到制造业和其他非农业职业的逐渐转化为特征。

17 Surrounding the column are three sepals and three petals, sometimes easily recognizable as such, often distorted into gorgeous, weird, but always functional shapes.

动词作补语提前

n. 蕊柱

n. 萼片

n. 花瓣

动词作状语

such 是代词，as such 作状语意为“像这样的情况”、“以这种名义、身份或资格”，英文解释是 intrinsically considered。例如：He was not only a politician but also an inventor and well-known as such.

句子翻译

围绕着蕊柱的是三个萼片和三个花瓣，像这样的情况有时很容易辨认出来，萼片和花瓣经常被扭曲成华丽、奇特但总是有一定功能的形状。

并列句，前后同等重要　　动词作定语修饰 welt

18 The warp was always made of willow, and the most commonly used welt was sedge root—a

名词作同位语解释 sedge root　　宾语提前

woody fiber that could easily be separated into strands no thicker than a thread.

定语从句修饰 fiber

句子翻译

经向篾条经常由柳条制成，而纬向篾条中经常使用的是莎草根，这是一种能被轻易分成比线还细的多股的木制纤维。

宾语提前

19 Here in lay the beginning of what ultimately turned from ignorance to denial of the value of

名词从句，和 of 组成介词短语，what 在从句中作主语

nutritional therapies in medicine.

句子翻译

这里包含了医学中从对营养疗法价值无知到否认其价值这一过程的开端。

另一种完全倒装

除了以上类型，还有一种伴随着省略现象的完全倒装。

介词短语作状语

20 Individualism is weakly developed in folk cultures, as are social classes.

状语从句，补全后是 as social classes are weakly developed，重心仍是逗号前的主句。

句子翻译

个人主义在民间文化中发展薄弱，正如社会阶层在民间文化中薄弱发展一样。

状语从句　　形容词作补语

21 As the roles men and women played in society became more rigidly defined, so did the roles

副词作状语。主句补全后是 the roles they played in the home became more rigidly defined。

they played in the home.

句子翻译

随着男性和女性在社会当中扮演的角色变得被更严格地定义，他们在家庭中扮演的角色也变得被严格定义。

22

n. 情绪　　状语从句

Anti-immigrant sentiment typically increases, as does conflict between races and classes.

句子翻译

反移民情绪增长，正如种族与阶层之间的冲突增长一样。

23

Life's transition from the sea to the land was perhaps as much of an evolutionary challenge as was the genesis of life.

状语从句，补全后是 as the genesis of life was an evolutionary challenge。

句子翻译

生命从海洋到陆地的过渡可能是一个进化方面的挑战，正如生命起源是进化方面的挑战一样。

24

动词作定语修饰 capacity　　adv. 可能地　　vt. 继承；遗传

The capacity to acquire habits can be conceivably inherited just as much as can definite responses to specific situations. Environment and heredity are in no case exclusive but always supplementary factors.

状语从句，补全后是 as definite responses to specific situations can be conceivably inherited。

介词短语作定语修饰 responses

介词短语作状语，no 是形容词，字面的意思是“在没有的情况下都是”，也就是“在任何情况下都不”，此处相当于 not…but…

adj. 增补的

句子翻译

获得习惯的能力可能是遗传的，正如对特定环境所做的明确反应能被遗传一样。环境和遗传在任何情况下都不是互相独立的，却总是互为补充的。

25

动词作定语修饰 prosperity　　vt. 继承；遗传

With the growing prosperity brought on by the Second World War and the economic boom that followed it, young people married and established households earlier and began to raise larger families than had their predecessors during the Depression.

定语从句修饰 economic boom

代词指代 Second World War

句子翻译

随着第二次世界大战带来的持续繁荣以及随后的经济增长，年轻人比经济萧条期中的同龄人更早结婚，更早成家，而且开始抚养更大的家庭。

26

副词作状语

But as the number of wage earners in manufacturing rose from 2.7 million in 1880 to 4.5 million

状语从句

in 1900 to 8.4 million in 1920, the number of huge plants like the Baldwin Locomotive Works in

介词短语作状语

Philadelphia burgeoned, as did the size of the average plant.

句子翻译

但随着制造业中工薪阶层的人数从 1880 年的 270 万上升到 1900 年的 450 万再到 1920 年的 840 万，像费城鲍德温机车工厂这样的大型工厂数量大幅增加，同时普通工厂的规模也大幅剧增。

27

副词作状语　*n.* 拉格泰姆音乐

In the twenties, jazz became the hottest new thing in dance music, much as ragtime had at the

状语从句，补全后是 much as ragtime had become at the turn of the century。此处用过去完成时是因为世纪之交在二十年代以前。

turn of the century, and as would rhythm and blues in the forties, rock in the fifties, and disco in

并列的状语从句，补全后是 and as rhythm and blues in the forties, rock in the fifties, and disco in the seventies would become。此句用过去将来时是因为四十年代、五十年代和七十年代在二十年代之后，但相对作者写此句的时间又都是过去。

the seventies.

句子翻译

20 世纪 20 年代，爵士乐成为舞蹈音乐里最热门的新事物，正如世纪之交时流行的拉格泰姆音乐一样，也正如 40 年代的节奏与布鲁斯、50 年代的摇滚乐和 70 年代的迪斯科将变得流行一样。

28

形式主语　动词作主语

Though it may be difficult to imagine from a later perspective, a strain of critical opinion in the

宾语从句　虚拟语气，言下之意是有声电影并没有迅速淡出历史舞台。

1920s predicted that sound film would be a technical novelty that would soon fade from sight,

动词作定语修饰 attempts　定语从句修饰 novelty

just as had many previous attempts, dating well back before the First World War, to link images

状语从句。谓语动词 had faded 意为“迅速淡出”这一动作在第一次世界大战前已经发生。　动词作定语修饰 attempts

with recorded sound.

句子翻译

虽然现在看来不可思议，但是在 19 世纪 20 年代一连串的批判性观点预测有声电影将会是一项迅速淡出人们视线的技术上的新事物，就像第一次世界大战之前将画面与声音联系在一起的数次尝试当时迅速淡出人们视线一样。

第三节　宾语后置现象如何破？

宾语前置

宾语经常出现前置和后置，前置是为了强调宾语。例如：Your father I like, but your mother I can't stand，如果写成正常语序：I like your father, but I can't stand your mother 将没有任何强调作用。再看较难的例句：

典型例句分析

前置的宾语，目的是强调　　动词作补语　　形容词作补语，此时 be 看成谓语动词

29 The inner workings of our brain we feel to be uniquely worthy of investigation, but custom, we

介词短语作定语修饰 behavior

have a way of thinking, is behavior at its most commonplace. As a matter of fact, it is the other way around.

句子翻译

我们认为自己脑海深处的活动才值得研究，而一般想法是，风俗不过是最平凡的行为而已。实际上正好相反。

宾语后置

宾语后置在前文必杀句 20、43、73、76 中都曾出现，就是在动词和它的宾语之间放置本该在后面的其他成分，是为了强调提前的补语或状语，还有可能是为了让意思更为连贯，避免歧义。例如：

I'd like to thank at this particular moment and upon all of you my dearest lovely mom.

在这个特殊时刻并当着诸位的面，我要衷心感谢我最亲爱的妈妈。

两个并列的状语提前到谓语动词和宾语之间，一是为了强调状语，二是为了增强答案最后说出的悬疑，就像说："我告诉你一个秘密，一个我从来没告诉过任何人的秘密，你知道了千万不要告诉别人，那就是我中大奖了！"

宾语后置还有可能是为了避免歧义，较长的内容后置就是将较短的内容前置并尽快说完，如此布置整个句子更显精练。例如：

I brought to him a book which was published two years ago.

如果写成正常语序I brought a book which was published two years ago to him将可能被理解为“我带来一本对他来说两年前出版的书”。

I recommended to my boss my friend who is very talented.

如果写成正常语序I recommended my friend who is very talented to my boss将可能被理解为“我推荐了一个对我老板来说特别有天赋的朋友”。

30

注意 consider 的及物动词语感　宾语从句

Some people consider impossible what is really possible.

形容词作补语提前

句子翻译

一些人将可能的事情当作不可能。

31

vt. 逐步灌输　介词短语作状语提前

The general tried to instill in his troops the hope of victory.

注意 instill 的及物动词语感

句子翻译

将军试图将胜利的希望灌输给他的部队。

32

注意 leave 的及物动词语感　*n.* 织布机　*n.* 阁楼　*n.* 煮皂锅

The flow of industry has passed and left idle the loom in the attic, the soap kettle in the shed.

形容词作补语提前　*n.* 棚

句子翻译

工业之潮已流过，让阁楼里的织布机空闲，让棚子里的煮皂锅搁置。

33

动词作状语。注意 bring 的及物动词语感　介词短语作状语提前

Black Fiction surveys a wide variety of novels, bringing to our attention in the process some fascinating and little-known works.

形容词作补语提前　介词短语作补语提前

句子翻译

黑人小说考察了极为广泛的小说，在此过程中把一些引人入胜的小众作品带到我们的视野中。

34

注意 make 的及物动词语感　动词作宾语

The use of well-chosen nonsense words makes possible the testing of many basic hypotheses

介词短语作状语

in the field of language learning.

句子翻译

在语言学习领域里，使用一些精心挑选的无意义的词使得对很多基本假说的检验成为可能。

35

介词短语作状语

Thus, the anthropological concept of "culture", like the concept of "set" in mathematics, is

定语从句修饰 concept

an abstract concept which makes possible immense amounts of concrete research and

形容词作补语提前

understanding.

句子翻译

因此，人类学中"文化"的概念就像数学中"集合"的概念一样，是一个使得大量具体研究和认知成为可能的抽象概念。

36

In large part as a consequence of the feminist movement, historians have focused a great deal of

动词名词化，注意 determine 的及物动词语感

attention in recent years on determining more accurately the status of women in various periods.

副词作状语提前，表强调的同时避免歧义

句子翻译

在很大程度上，由于女权主义运动，历史学家近年来聚集了大量注意力在更为准确地确定妇女各个历史时期的地位上。

37 For instance, the mass-production philosophy of United States automakers encouraged the production of huge lots of cars in order to utilize fully expensive, component-specific equipment and to occupy fully workers who have been trained to execute one operation efficiently.

动词作状语。注意 utilize 的及物动词语感。

副词作状语提前

副词作状语提前

动词作状语。注意 occupy 的及物动词语感

句子翻译

例如，美国汽车制造商大规模生产的观念鼓励大批量生产汽车，为了充分利用昂贵的制造专用零件的设备，还为了能够占满被训练来高效执行单一操作的工人们的时间。

38 It is the business of the scientist to accumulate knowledge about the universe and all that is in it, and to find, if he is able, common factors which underlie and account for the facts that he knows.

形式主语

动词作主语

代词指代 universe

状语从句提前以插入语形式出现，同时宾语后置。

动词作主语

句子翻译

科学家的工作就是积累有关宇宙及宇宙中一切事物的知识，并且找出，如果他有能力，既是他所知事实的基础又能解释他所知事实的共同因素。

读完例句可能有读者问："每个人只能从左到右阅读，如何在读完整句前发现宾语后置？"关键点在于对谓语动词的理解，即前面 instill、leave、bring、make、determine、utilize、occupy、invest、accumulate、find 无一例外都是及物动词，及物动词后如果出现介词短语，很明显不是宾语而是提前的其他成分。根据预判原则，阅读时的语感是等着真正的宾语出现。

第四节　百句练兵突破特殊语序（必杀句 78 ～ 92）

必杀句 78

难度系数 3.0

形容词作补语

Coincident with concerns about the accelerating loss of species and habitats has been a growing appreciation of the importance of biological diversity, the number of species in a particular ecosystem, to the health of the Earth and human well-being.

名词作同位语解释 diversity

句子翻译

在对物种和动物栖息地加速消失表示关注的同时，人们对生物多样性（即对地球的健康以及人类幸福来说一个特定生态系统中物种的数量）的重要性的认识也在加深。

必杀句 79

难度系数 3.0

形容词作补语　*adj.* 美学的　同位语从句解释 principle

Implicit in it is an aesthetic principle: that the medium has certain qualities of beauty and expressiveness with which sculptors must bring their own aesthetic sensibilities into harmony.

定语从句修饰 expressiveness，with which 在从句中作状语

句子翻译

其中蕴含一个美学原则：这种媒介物富有一定的美感和表现力，雕刻家必须运用这些使他们自己的美学敏感性更为和谐。

必杀句 80

难度系数 3.5

adj. 相似的，类比的　代词指代 function，比较结构必须对称　介词短语作状语提前

His function is analogous to that of a judge, who must accept the obligation of revealing in as

定语从句修饰 judge　注意 reveal 的及物动词语感

obvious a manner as possible the course of reasoning which led him to his decision.

定语从句修饰 reasoning

句子翻译

他的作用类似于必须承担职责的法官，该职责是以尽可能明显的方式揭示使他做出决定的推理的过程。

必杀句 81

难度系数 3.5

状语从句。道理同必杀句 13、59、66、70　介词短语作状语提前　宾语从句

Although it has been possible to infer from the goods and services actually produced what

形式主语　动词作主语，注意 infer 的及物动词语感　动词作定语修饰 goods 和 services

manufactures and servicing trades thought their customers wanted, only a study of relevant

强调主语

personal documents written by actual consumers will provide a precise picture of who

动词作定语修饰 documents

wanted what.

句子翻译

尽管有可能从实际制造的商品和服务中推断制造商和服务业认为他们的顾客需要的是什么，但只有对实际顾客撰写的相关个人资料进行研究，才能给出什么人需要什么的精确描述。

难句解析

although 状语从句很长，不要忘了重点是主句，only a study 前有“但是”的语感。

必杀句 82

难度系数 3.0

n. 知识分子　定语从句修饰 individual

I shall define an intellectual as an individual who has elected as his primary duty and pleasure in

介词短语作补语　注意 elect 的及物动词语感　介词短语作补语提前

life the activity of thinking in Socratic way about moral problems.

句子翻译

我将知识分子定义为这样一种人，这种人把用苏格拉底式的方式思考道德问题作为自己人生的首要职责和最大乐趣。

必杀句 83

难度系数 3.5

宾语从句

Friedrich Engels, however, predicted that women would be liberated from the "social, legal, and

定语从句修饰 developments

economic subordination" of the family by technological developments that made possible the

n. 附属　注意 make 的及物动词语感　形容词作补语提前

recruitment of "the whole female sex into public industry".

句子翻译

然而，弗里德里希·恩格斯预测女性将通过使得招募“整个女性阶层进入公共事业”成为可能的科技发展，从家庭的“社会、法律和经济附属中”解放出来。

难句解析

引号表达同必杀句 3、6，表示引用，和原文无缝连接。

背景知识

弗里德里希·冯·恩格斯（Friedrich Von Engels，1820–1895），德国思想家、哲学家、革命家、教育家，全世界无产阶级和劳动人民的伟大导师，马克思主义创始人之一。恩格斯是马克思的挚友，他为马克思从事学术研究提供大量经济支持。马克思逝世后，他将马克思遗留下的大量手稿、遗著整理出版，并众望所归地成为国际工人运动的领袖。

必杀句 84

难度系数 3.5

形式主语　主语从句

It is worrisome that society is medicalizing more and more behavioral problems, often defining

介词短语作补语提前　*adj.* 严厉的，严肃的，坚定的　动词作状语，注意 define 的及物动词语感

as addictions what earlier, sterner generations explained as weakness of will.

宾语从句，what 在从句中作宾语　介词短语作补语

句子翻译

令人担心的是社会把越来越多的行为问题当医学问题来处理，常常把更严厉的老一辈人认为是意志薄弱的行为定义为上瘾。

难句解析

此句两个 as 都是补语，第一个 as 正常语序是 define what as addictions，第二个 as 正常语序是 explain what as weekness of will，what 就像门的铰链连接主句和从句。

必杀句 85

难度系数 3.0

注意 advocates 的及物动词语感　*n.* 暴政，专横

Walzer advocates as the means of eliminating this tyranny and of restoring genuine equality "the

介词短语作补语提前　of eliminating 和 of restoring 定语并列

abolition of the power of money outside its sphere".

句子翻译

沃尔泽倡议把“在金钱圈之外对金钱力量的废除”作为消除这种暴行并重获真正平等的方法。

必杀句 86

难度系数 4.5

副词作状语　助动词强调谓语动词

Yet his argument, however deficient, does point to one of the most serious weaknesses of

同位语从句解释 weaknesses　注意 bring 的及物动词语感　插入语是状语从句。插入语的位置紧接在 who 之后是为了形成和主语的反差。

capitalism—namely, that it brings to predominant positions in a society people who, no matter

代词指代 capitalism　介词短语作补语提前　*adj.* 主要的，占优势地位的　定语从句修饰 people

how legitimately they have earned their material rewards, often lack those other qualities that

adv. 合理地，合法地　定语从句的谓语动词，不要被 no matter how 状语从句打扰，读到 lack 要清楚意识到接的是 who。　定语从句修饰 qualities

evoke affection or admiration.

句子翻译

然而他的论点尽管不充分，但确实指出了资本主义最严重的弱点之一——资本主义将一种人放到社会的显赫地位，他们不管以怎样合法的方式获得物质回报，这种人常常缺乏那些唤起情感和崇拜的品质。

难句解析

此句知识点很综合，除了没有特殊结构，其余五个难点都有。分别是长名词结构（that 同位语从句），长定语（who），长状语（no matter how），长插入语（no matter how），特殊语序（people 宾语后置）。就像书法里“永”字包含所有汉字笔画一样，值得反复练习。

必杀句 87

难度系数 3.5

形式主语　动词作主语。注意 establish 的及物动词语感。

As a consequence, it may prove difficult or impossible to establish for a successful revolution a

介词短语作状语提前

comprehensive and trustworthy picture of those who participated, or to answer even the most

定语从句修饰 those　动词作主语

basic questions one might pose concerning the social origins of the insurgents.

省略 that 的定语从句修饰 questions　介词短语作状语，参见必杀句 24 边缘介词　*n.* 起义者，叛乱者

句子翻译

作为后果，为一次成功的革命建立一个综合的、值得信赖的对参与者的描述以及对甚至是最基本的关于起义者社会背景问题的回答，可能是困难或完全不可能的。

必杀句 88

难度系数 3.5

宾语从句

The broad language of the amendment strongly suggests that its framers were proposing to write

动词作宾语，注意 write 的及物动词语感。

预判后面有 but

into the Constitution not a laundry list of specific civil rights but a principle of equal citizenship

介词短语作补语提前

that forbids organized society from treating any individual as a member of an inferior class.

定语从句修饰 principle　　介词短语作补语　　介词短语作补语

句子翻译

修正案的宽泛语言强烈显示出制定者意欲写入宪法的不是具体公民权利的一个清单，而是平等公民权的原则，这一原则禁止有组织的社会将任何个人视为劣等阶层的成员。

必杀句 89

难度系数 3.5

形容词作补语　　主语从句　　请注意 maintain 的及物动词语感

Most important, perhaps, was that they had all maintained with a certain fidelity a manner of

介词短语作状语　　*n.* 忠诚，忠实

technique and composition consistent with those of America's first popular landscape

形容词作后置定语修饰 technique 和 composition。　　代词指代 technique 和 composition

artist, Thomas Cole, who built a career painting the Catskill Mountain scenery bordering the

定语从句修饰 Thomas Cole　　动词作定语修饰 career　　动词作定语修饰 scenery

Hudson River.

句子翻译

也许最重要的是他们都在某种程度上忠实地保持一种与美国第一位流行山水画家托马斯·科尔相一致的技巧和创作方式，科尔建立了一个描绘临近哈得逊河的恺特斯基尔山风景的事业。

背景知识

托马斯·科尔（Thomas Cole，1801–1848），英国出生的美国艺术家，他是哈得逊画派（Hudson River School）最主要的创始人之一。科尔所创立的哈得逊画派以及他自己的作品都是描绘美国风景旷野的现实主义，采用的手法是浪漫主义或自然主义。

必杀句 90

难度系数 3.0

形式主语　动词作主语，注意 demonstrate 的及物动词语感。

It was possible to demonstrate by other methods refined structural differences among neuron

介词短语作状语提前　介词短语作定语修饰 differences

types; however, proof was lacking that the quality of the impulse or its condition was influenced

同位语从句解释 proof

by these differences, which seemed instead to influence the developmental patterning of the

定语从句修饰 these differences　副词作状语

neural circuits.

句子翻译

有可能通过其他方法来证明神经元种类间的细微结构差异，但是非常缺乏这样的证据，即神经冲动的性质或状态是受这些差异所影响的，这些差异似乎反过来能影响神经网络的发育模式。

难句解析

此句 proof was lacking 的语序类似于原则六中 That sex ratio 那一句，作者迫不及待地把短的内容先说完，把较长和用来解释的定语或同位语后置。再比如：

Several cases have been reported recently of people who can read and detect colors with their fingers, and even see through solid doors and walls.

最近一些案例报道说有人能用手指阅读和察觉颜色，视线甚至能穿过坚实的门墙。

必杀句 91

难度系数 3.0

注意 say 的及物动词语感　宾语从句　动词作定语修饰 part

John Dewey has said in all seriousness that the part played by custom in shaping the behavior

介词短语作状语提前　介词短语作状语

of the individual as over against any way in which he can affect traditional custom, is as the

prep. 与……相反，与……成鲜明的对照　定语从句修饰 way

proportion of the total vocabulary of his mother tongue over against those words of his own baby

定语从句修饰 talk　*adj.* 方言的，白话的　状语从句

talk that are taken up into the vernacular of his family. When one seriously studies the social

定语从句修饰 orders。从句谓语动词采取现在完成时，强调“已经有机会自发形成的制度”。

orders that have had the opportunity to develop autonomously, the figure becomes no more than

特殊表达，更多例句参见第九章《火眼金睛—— 如何不被特殊表达迷惑》。more than 字面意为“比它更多”、“不仅仅是”，那么 no more than 可以理解为“仅仅是”。

an exact and matter-of-fact observation.

句子翻译

约翰·杜威曾严肃地指出，风俗在塑造个人行为方面所起的作用与他影响传统风俗的任何方法相比，正如他母语的总词汇量与他在婴儿时期能被家庭用语所采用的词汇量相比一样。当人们认真地对有机会自发形成的社会制度进行研究时，上述比喻就成了完全确切和实事求是的评语。

背景知识

约翰·杜威（John Dewey，1859–1952），美国哲学家、教育家、心理学家，实用主义集大成者，著作涉及科学、艺术、宗教伦理、政治、教育、社会学、历史学和经济学等方面。1879 年毕业于佛蒙特大学，后又在约翰霍普金斯大学攻读博士学位。五四运动前后杜威曾来中国讲学，促进了实用主义在中国的传播。

必杀句 92

难度系数 5.0

代词指代 idea　介词短语作补语提前　*n.* 染色体　*adj.* 分离的，不连续的

One such novel idea is that of inserting into the chromosomes of plants discrete genes

注意 insert 的及物动词语感

定语从句修饰 genes　名词作同位语解释 idea

that are not a part of the plants' natural constitution: specifically, the idea of inserting into

插入语是状语从句，位置紧接在 genes 之后是为了形成和主语的反差。　介词短语作补语提前

adj. 非豆科的　定语从句修饰 genes

nonleguminous plants the genes, if they can be identified and isolated, that fit the leguminous

省略现象，补全后是 inserting into the chromosomes of nonleguminous plants。　*adj.* 豆科的

plants to be hosts for nitrogen-fixing bacteria. Hence, the intensified research on legumes.

动词作补语　*n.* 豆科植物

句子翻译

一个创新的想法是在植物染色体内注入不是该植物天然组成部分的分离的因基：具体来说就是在非豆科植物内注入使得豆科植物适合充当固氮细菌寄主的基因，如果这些基因能被辨识和分离。因此，对豆科植物的研究加强了。

难句解析

1. 此句冒号后就是 idea 一个名词，解释前面的 idea。

2. 最后 Hence, the intensified research on legumes 是很常见的省略表达。例如：

Such advantages lead to further investment, and hence a rise in its price.

这样的优势产生了更多的投资，因此价格上涨。

Smaller scars and less swelling are created using 18-gauge intravenous catheter needle and hence a better cosmetic result.

使用 18# 静脉导管针使得刀疤更小肿胀更少，因此有了更好的整容效果。

The oil industry is marked by a certain amount of smell and an element of danger, hence the siting of refineries at a distance from population centers.

由于石油工业总有某些气味并存在危险因素，因此炼油厂总建在远离人口中心的地方。

还有托福例句：

Therefore, if the Earth began as a superheated sphere in space, all the rocks making up its crust may well have been igneous and thus the ancestors of all other rocks.

因此，如果地球始于太空中一个极热的球体，那么所有组成地壳的岩石很有可能是火成的，因此这些岩石是其他所有岩石的祖先。

第五节 百句精练

典型例句

S_1 Only when a system possesses natural or artificial boundaries that associate the water within it the hydrologic cycle may the entire system properly be termed hydrogeological.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_2 Only in the case of the February Revolution do we lack a useful description of participants that might characterize it in the light of what social history has taught us about the process of revolutionary mobilization.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_3 From the demonstration of a principle to the marketing of products derived from that principle is often a long, involved series of steps.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_4 Among the accomplishments of President Polk are the creation of an independent treasure, the establishment of lower tariffs, and the purchase of the Oregon territory.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_5 Among the species of seabirds that use the windswept cliffs of the Atlantic coast of Canada in the summer to mate, lay eggs, and rear their young are common murres, Atlantic puffins, black-legged kittiwakes, and northern gannets.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_6 Typical of the grassland dwellers of the continent is the American antelope, or pronghorn.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_7 Equally important is the fact that the execution of multiple-step tasks is accomplished in a series-parallel sequence.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_8 Basic to any understanding of Canada in the 20 years after the Second World War is the country's impressive population growth.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_9 More difficult is discerning precisely how these lean times are affecting society's character.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{10} More probable is bird transport, either externally, by accidental attachment of the seeds to feathers, or internally, by the swallowing of fruit and subsequent excretion of the seeds.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{11} Most striking among the many asymmetries evident in an adult flatfish is eye placement: before maturity one eye migrates, so that in an adult flatfish both eyes are on the same side of the head.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{12} Of all the changes that have taken place in English–language newspapers during the past quarter–century, perhaps the most far–reaching has been the inexorable decline in the scope and seriousness of their arts coverage.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{13} Outside the magnetosphere, blasting toward the Earth is the solar wind, a swiftly moving plasma of ionized gases with its own magnetic field.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{14} Missing until recently were fossils clearly intermediate, or transitional, between land mammals and cetaceans.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{15} Matching the influx of foreign immigrants into larger cities of the United States during the late nineteenth century was a domestic migration, from town and farm to city, within the United States.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{16} Accompanying that growth was a structural change that featured increasing economic diversification and a gradual shift in the nation's labor force from agriculture to manufacturing and other nonagricultural pursuits.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{17} Surrounding the column are three sepals and three petals, sometimes easily recognizable as such, often distorted into gorgeous, weird, but always functional shapes.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{18} The warp was always made of willow, and the most commonly used welt was sedge root—a woody fiber that could easily be separated into strands no thicker than a thread.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{19} Here in lay the beginning of what ultimately turned from ignorance to denial of the value of nutritional therapies in medicine.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{20} Individualism is weakly developed in folk cultures, as are social classes.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{21} As the roles men and women played in society became more rigidly defined, so did the roles they played in the home.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{22} Anti–immigrant sentiment typically increases, as does conflict between races and classes.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{23} Life's transition from the sea to the land was perhaps as much of an evolutionary challenge as was the genesis of life.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{24} The capacity to acquire habits can be conceivably inherited just as much as can definite responses to specific situations. Environment and heredity are in no case exclusive but always supplementary factors.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{25} With the growing prosperity brought on by the Second World War and the economic boom that followed it, young people married and established households earlier and began to raise larger families than had their predecessors during the Depression.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{26} But as the number of wage earners in manufacturing rose from 2.7 million in 1880 to 4.5 million in 1900 to 8.4 million in 1920, the number of huge plants like the Baldwin Locomotive Works in Philadelphia burgeoned, as did the size of the average plant.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{27} In the twenties, jazz became the hottest new thing in dance music, much as ragtime had at the turn of the century, and as would rhythm and blues in the forties, rock in the fifties, and disco in the seventies.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{28} Though it may be difficult to imagine from a later perspective, a strain of critical opinion in the 1920s predicted that sound film would be a technical novelty that would soon fade from sight, just as had many previous attempts, dating well back before the First World War, to link images with recorded sound.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{29} The inner workings of our brain we feel to be uniquely worthy of investigation, but custom, we have a way of thinking, is behavior at its most commonplace. As a matter of fact, it is the other way around.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{30} Some people consider impossible what is really possible.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{31} The general tried to instill in his troops the hope of victory.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{32} The flow of industry has passed and left idle the loom in the attic, the soap kettle in the shed.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{33} Black Fiction surveys a wide variety of novels, bringing to our attention in the process some fascinating and little-known works.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{34} The use of well-chosen nonsense words makes possible the testing of many basic hypotheses in the field of language learning.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{35} Thus, the anthropological concept of “culture”, like the concept of “set” in mathematics, is an abstract concept which makes possible immense amounts of concrete research and understanding.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{36} In large part as a consequence of the feminist movement, historians have focused a great deal of attention in recent years on determining more accurately the status of women in various periods.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{37} For instance, the mass-production philosophy of United States automakers encouraged the production of huge lots of cars in order to utilize fully expensive, component-specific equipment and to occupy fully workers who have been trained to execute one operation efficiently.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{38} It is the business of the scientist to accumulate knowledge about the universe and all that is in it, and to find, if he is able, common factors which underlie and account for the facts that he knows.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

必杀句 78 ~ 92

S_{78} Coincident with concerns about the accelerating loss of species and habitats has been a growing appreciation of the importance of biological diversity, the number of species in a particular ecosystem, to the health of the Earth and human well–being.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{79} Implicit in it is an aesthetic principle: that the medium has certain qualities of beauty and expressiveness with which sculptors must bring their own aesthetic sensibilities into harmony.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{80} His function is analogous to that of a judge, who must accept the obligation of revealing in as obvious a manner as possible the course of reasoning which led him to his decision.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{81} Although it has been possible to infer from the goods and services actually produced what manufactures and servicing trades thought their customers wanted, only a study of relevant personal documents written by actual consumers will provide a precise picture of who wanted what.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{82} I shall define an intellectual as an individual who has elected as his primary duty and pleasure in life the activity of thinking in Socratic way about moral problems.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{83} Friedrich Engels, however, predicted that women would be liberated from the “social, legal, and economic subordination” of the family by technological developments that made possible the recruitment of “the whole female sex into public industry”.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{84} It is worrisome that society is medicalizing more and more behavioral problems, often defining as addictions what earlier, sterner generations explained as weakness of will.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{85} Walzer advocates as the means of eliminating this tyranny and of restoring genuine equality “the abolition of the power of money outside its sphere”.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{86} Yet his argument, however deficient, does point to one of the most serious weaknesses of capitalism — namely, that it brings to predominant positions in a society people who, no matter how legitimately they have earned their material rewards, often lack those other qualities that evoke affection or admiration.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{87} As a consequence, it may prove difficult or impossible to establish for a successful revolution a comprehensive and trustworthy picture of those who participated, or to answer even the most basic questions one might pose concerning the social origins of the insurgents.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{88} The broad language of the amendment strongly suggests that its framers were proposing to write into the Constitution not a laundry list of specific civil rights but a principle of equal citizenship that forbids organized society from treating any individual as a member of an inferior class.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{89} Most important, perhaps, was that they had all maintained with a certain fidelity a manner of technique and composition consistent with those of America's first popular landscape artist, Thomas Cole, who built a career painting the Catskill Mountain scenery bordering the Hudson River.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{90} It was possible to demonstrate by other methods refined structural differences among neuron types; however, proof was lacking that the quality of the impulse or its condition was influenced by these differences, which seemed instead to influence the developmental patterning of the neural circuits.

精读遍数： ❑

S_{91} John Dewey has said in all seriousness that the part played by custom in shaping the behavior of the individual as over against any way in which he can affect traditional custom, is as the proportion of the total vocabulary of his mother tongue over against those words of his own baby talk that are taken up into the vernacular of his family. When one seriously studies the social orders that have had the opportunity to develop autonomously, the figure becomes no more than an exact and matter-of-fact observation.

精读遍数： ❑

S92 One such novel idea is that of inserting into the chromosomes of plants discrete genes that are not a part of the plants' natural constitution: specifically, the idea of inserting into nonleguminous plants the genes, if they can be identified and isolated, that fit the leguminous plants to be hosts for nitrogen–fixing bacteria. Hence, the intensified research on legumes.

精读遍数： ❑

第九章

火眼金睛——如何不被特殊表达迷惑

第一节　特殊表达如何破?

最后一个难点特殊表达是指字面含义和实际含义差距较大的表达，例如 dubious distinction 实际意为“所谓的名声”或“不光彩的名声”；more often than not 意为“经常”；once and for all 意为“一劳永逸”。

比较关系是一个难点，例如变形金刚的经典用语“Transformers is all about robots in disguise and more than meets the eye”，还有《魔戒》中甘道夫对佛罗多的评价“There is more to this hobbit than meets the eye”。最微妙的是 She is no more clever than you 不是字面“她不比你聪明”的意思，而是像中文里“她比你还胖”有隐含意思一样，意为“她和你都不聪明”或“她不比你聪明，但你也挺笨的”。

典型例句分析

dubious distinction

1. El Salvador has earned the dubious distinction of having the worst soil erosion in continental America.

句子翻译

萨尔瓦多因为是美洲大陆土壤侵蚀最严重的地方而有了不光彩的名声。

2. Cleveland has won the dubious distinction of being the most miserable city in the United States, according to a new poll.

句子翻译

根据最新民调显示，克利夫兰获得了美国最悲惨城市的名声。

3. Only two countries in the advanced world provide no guarantee for maternity leave and one of them, Australia, gave up the dubious distinction by establishing paid family leave starting in 2011.

句子翻译

发达国家中只有两个国家不承诺产假，作为其中一个国家的澳大利亚从 2011 年开始通过家庭假这一方式甩掉了这个不光彩的名声。

4. It is his dubious distinction to have proved what nobody would think of denying, that Romero at the age of sixty-four writes with all the characteristics of maturity.

句子翻译

他去证明那些谁也不会否认的事实来获得所谓的声誉，比如罗梅洛在六十四岁时体现出创作的成熟特征。

too…to…

意为“太……而不能”，too 表示否定，后面的 to do 表示“不能”

5 If the pores are large, the water in them will exist as drops too heavy for surface tension to hold, and it will drain away; but if the pores are small enough, the water in them will exist as thin films, too light to overcome the force of surface tension holding them in place; then the water will be firmly held.

句子翻译

如果孔隙很大，其中的水将会以水滴的形式存在，这些水滴过重足以克服表面张力，然后流走；但如果孔隙足够小，水会像薄膜一样，太轻无法克服表面张力，从而稳稳地附着在上面。

6 Even the “radical” critiques of this mainstream research model, such as the critique developed in *Divided Society*, attach the issue of ethnic assimilation too mechanically to factors of economic and social mobility and are thus unable to illuminate the cultural subordination of Puerto Ricans as a colonial minority.

句子翻译

即使是对这一主流研究模型“激进”的批判，比如《分裂的社会》中提出的批判，将种族同化过于机械地与经济和社会变动的因素联系在一起，因此无法阐明波多黎各人作为殖民地少数民族的文化从属关系。

难句解析

为了避免歧义，此句没有写成 too mechanically to illuminate，而把 are thus unable to illuminate 写全了。类似的我们也可以把 It is too hot to go out 写成 It is too hot and is thus unable to go out，意思没变，只是啰唆一点而已。

chances are…

7 Chances are that she’s already heard the news.

句子翻译

她很可能已经知道这个消息了。

8 The chances are you haven’t fully decided what you want from your career at the moment, in which case you are definitely not ready to be a leader.

句子翻译

你此刻很可能没有完全确立自己的职业目标，在此情况下你绝对没有做好成为领导的准备。

by virtue of

9 He passed the examination by virtue of hard work.

句子翻译

他凭借刻苦努力通过了考试。

10 He was elected chairman by virtue of his seniority.

句子翻译

他凭借老资格当选主席。

in terms of / in term of

11 It is difficult to express it in terms of science.

句子翻译

用科学很难解释这个现象。

12 He referred to your work in terms of high praise.

句子翻译

他对你的工作大加赞扬。

13 He thought of everything in terms of money.

句子翻译

他从钱的角度看每一件事。

14 In term of money, he's quite rich, but not in term of happiness.

句子翻译

就钱来说他很富有，但就幸福来说并不是。

15 In term of law, they are equally authentic.

句子翻译

就法律条款而言，它们具有同等效力。

not so much...as...

16 He was not so much angry as disappointed.

句子翻译

他与其说生气，不如说失望。

17 His style of argument in the meeting is not so much aggressive as pertinacious.

句子翻译

他在会议上的观点与其说是锋芒毕露，不如说是坚持己见。

18 The great use of a school education is not so much to teach you things as to teach you the art of learning.

句子翻译

学校的最大作用不在于教你知识，而在于教你学习的方法。

19 Disputes between managers and owners are settled not so much by consultation as by litigation.

句子翻译

管理者与所有者之间的纠纷与其通过磋商解决还不如通过诉讼解决。

not so much as...

20 She never so much as spoke.

句子翻译

她连话都没说。

21 He did not so much as ask me to sit down.

句子翻译

他甚至没有请我坐下。

22 He did not so much as thank me.

句子翻译

他甚至都没谢我。

23 He went away without so much as saying goodbye.

句子翻译

他甚至不辞而别。

better than...

24 You should know better than to go swimmming on such a cold day.

句子翻译

你应该不至于在这么冷的天去游泳吧。

no more than/more than

25 His grammar is no better than mine.

句子翻译

他的语法和我一样不好。

26 He is no more diligent than you.

句子翻译

他不勤奋，你也不勤奋。

27 The heart is no more intelligent than the stomach, for they are both controlled by the brain.

句子翻译

心脏和胃都不智能，因为它们都受到大脑的控制。

28 He is no more a writer than a painter.

句子翻译

他既不是画家也不是作家。

29 I am no more a poet than he is a scholar.

句子翻译

我不算什么诗人，他也不是什么学者。

30 He is no less a writer than a painter.

句子翻译

他既是个作家也是个画家。

31 He is more good than bad.

句子翻译

与其说他很坏，不如说他很好。

32 He is less good than bad.

句子翻译

与其说他很好，不如说他很坏。

33 Pathological gambling involves persistent, recurring and uncontrollable pursuit less of money than of thrill of taking risks in quest of a windfall.

句子翻译

病态赌博是一种持续、反复且无法控制的追求，与其说是对金钱的追求不如说是对通过冒险获取意外横财带来的刺激的追求。

34 He is more than a father to her.

句子翻译

他待她胜过父亲。

35 The Web proved to be more than a fashion.

句子翻译

互联网不仅仅是一个时尚。

36 She was more than kind to us.

句子翻译

他对我们非常友善。

37 He was more than upset by the accident.

句子翻译

这个事故让他非常难过。

38 This is more than I can understand.

句子翻译

这件事情我实在不明白。

39 It is impossible to make more than the wildest guess at how many insects spiders kill, but they are hungry creatures, not content with only three meals a day.

句子翻译

根本不可能猜到蜘蛛究竟杀死多少昆虫，但蜘蛛是吃不饱的生物，不满足于一天三餐。

not any more than

40 Love without trust is not love any more than a bird without wings is a bird.

句子翻译

没有信任的爱情不能称为爱情就像没有翅膀的鸟不能称为鸟。

41

Science is built with facts just as a house is built with bricks, but a collection of facts cannot be called science any more than a pile of bricks can be called a house.

句子翻译

科学建立在事实上就像房子用砖砌成一样，但一些事实放在一起不能被称为科学就像一些砖堆在一起不能被称为房子。

42

vt. 支持，赞助

Chaplin will not be remembered for espousing radical causes any more than Wayne will be remembered for endorsing conservative political candidates.

vt. 背书；支持

句子翻译

查普林不会因为支持激进的事业被记住就像韦恩不会因为支持保守的政治候选人被记住一样。

第二节 百句练兵突破特殊表达（必杀句 93 ～ 100）

必杀句 93

难度系数 3.5

代词指代 achievements

The achievements of the colonial artists, particularly those of Copley, West, and Peale, lent credence

很生动的表达，类似于必杀句 14 的 owe。例如：
Distance lends enchantment to the view. 距离产生美。
The allusions lend the work a classical tone. 典故使作品带有古典的兴味。

to the boast that the new nation was capable of encouraging genius and that political liberty was

同位语从句解释 boast　　代词指代 achievements

congenial to the development of taste — a necessary step before art could assume an important role

adj. 意气相投的，适意的　　名词作同位语解释整个主句

in the new republic.

句子翻译

这些殖民地艺术家的成就，尤其是考伯莱、韦斯特和皮尔的成就，为新国家有支持天才的能力以及政治自由与艺术品位的发展是一致的这两个宣言提供了凭证——这是艺术在新共和国里担当重要角色之前所必须经历的一步。

必杀句 94

难度系数 3.5

n. 鳍肢；脚蹼

But the recent discovery of detailed similarities in the skeletal structure of the flippers in all three

介词短语作补语

groups undermines the attempt to explain away superficial resemblance as due to convergent

动词作定语修饰 attempt。请注意 explain away 的偏负面的含义，通常翻译为“搪塞”。　　*adj.* 趋同的，收敛的

evolution — the independent development of similarities between unrelated groups in response

名词作同位语解释 convergent evolution

to similar environmental pressures.

句子翻译

但是最近对所有这三类动物身上鳍肢骨骼结构的细微共同点的发现推翻了这种表面相似是因为趋同进化的结果，趋同进化指的是由于相似的环境压力互不相关的生物群体各自独立形成相似性的过程。

难句解析

更多 explain away 的例句：

He thought of a reason to explain away his failure.

他想出一个理由为他的失败辩解。

The murder suspect couldn't explain away his fingerprints at the scene.

杀人嫌疑犯解释不清为什么现场有他的指纹。

He explains away headline inflation as a temporary phenomenon.

他以总体通胀只是暂时的这一借口来搪塞。

必杀句 95

难度系数 3.5

not any more than 参见前文讲解　　定语从句修饰 moral code

His primary task is not to think about the moral code which governs his activity, any more

动词作补语

than a businessman is expected to dedicate his energies to an exploration of rules of product

in business.

句子翻译

他的首要任务不是思考约束其行为的道德准则，正如人们并不期待商人致力于探究商业产品准则一样。

必杀句 96

难度系数 3.5

For a number of years the selection of music for each film program rested entirely in the hands

很生动的表达

of the conductor or leader of the orchestra, and very often the principal qualification for holding

意为“甚至”

such a position was not skill or taste so much as the ownership of a large personal library of

musical pieces.

句子翻译

很多年来，为各部影片选择配乐的权力完全掌握在乐队指挥或乐队队长手中，通常担任这种职位的资格与其说是技巧或品位倒不如说是个人丰富音乐作品的所有权。

难句解析

not 和 so much as 搭配字面意为“甚至是所有权而不是技巧或品味”，通常翻译为“与其说是技巧或品味倒不说是所有权”。

I didn't so much as catch sight of him all day long.

我甚至一整天都没见他人影。

There was not so much as a trickle of water.

甚至没有任何一条水流。

Nothing has begun to interest her so much as folk music.

没有什么东西能像民俗音乐那样吸引她。

必杀句 97

难度系数 5.0

同位语从句解释 sense

These questions are political in the sense that the debate over them will inevitably be less

预判后面有 than

an exploration of abstract matters in a spirit of disinterested inquiry than an academic power

定语从句修饰 struggle

struggle in which the careers and professional fortunes of many women scholars — only now

动词作定语修饰 scholars

an academic power struggle 和 the chances 并列

entering the academic profession in substantial numbers — will be at stake, and with them the

介词短语作状语

chances for a distinctive contribution to humanistic understanding, a contribution that might be

adj. 特别的

名词作同位语解释 distinctive contribution

an important influence against sexism in our society.

句子翻译

这些问题是政治的，是因为关于它们的争论不可避免地与其说是在公正无私的追求下对于抽象事物的探索不如说是一种学术斗争，在该斗争中只有在当下才大量进入学术界的女性学者的职业生涯和专业命运都岌岌可危，同时还不如说是与她们相伴的对人文理解做出与众不同的贡献的机会，这一贡献有可能成为消除社会中性别歧视的重要力量。

难句解析

in the sense that 同位语从句中的主干是 the debate will be less an exploration than a struggle and the chances，意为“与其说……不如说……”。思想深刻的英文写作者在表达比较关系时经常把复杂的两者放在一起比较，较难读懂，例如：

Expressive leaders are less concerned with the overall goals of the group than with providing emotional support to group members and attempting to minimize tension and conflict among them.

善于表达的领袖较少注重团体的整体目标而更多注重为团体成员提供情感支持并努力减少成员之间的紧张和冲突。

Moreover, it was more merciful to launch the condemned man into eternity twenty-four hours after he was sentenced than to keep him shivering on the brink of that dread gulf for nearly three weeks.

而且，死刑判决后二十四小时就执行比让他在死亡边缘颤抖三个星期更为仁慈。

必杀句 98

难度系数 5.0

nor 提前引起主句倒装，并且表示强调主句　*n.* 适合，符合

Nor, if regularity and conformity to a standard pattern are as desirable to the scientist as the

插入语是状语从句，意为“if A to the scientist are as desirable as B”

writing of his papers would appear to reflect, is management to be blamed for discriminating

介词短语作状语

against the “odd balls” among researchers in favor of more conventional thinkers who “work well

介词短语作状语　定语从句修饰 thinkers

with the team”.

句子翻译

如果科学家对标准模式要求整齐划一就像他论文的写作所反映的一样，那么管理层就不应该因为喜欢较为传统的“善于团队合作”的思想者而歧视研究者中“思维与众不同的人”而受到指责。

难句解析

此句如果将 if 引导的状语从句提出来单独理解将容易得多，主干 Nor is management to be blamed 意为“管理层也不应该受到指责”。以下例句如果要强调 nor，都可以写成类似形式。

They can neither read nor write, nor can they comprehend such concepts.

他们不会读也不会写，也理解不了这样的概念。

Cooking up a quick dish doesn't mean you have to sacrifice flavor, nor does fast food have to be junk food.

快餐烹饪并不意味着牺牲风味，快餐也不见得一定是垃圾食品。

Soldiers rarely hold the ideals that movies attribute to them, nor do ordinary citizens devote their lives to unselfish service of humanity.

军人很少拥有电影中赋予他们的那种理想，普通公民也很少将他们的生命无私服役于全人类。

必杀句 99

难度系数 3.0

n. 团结　*adj.* 一致的，兼容的

But the play's complex view of Black self-esteem and human solidarity as compatible is no more "contradictory" than Du Bois' famous, well-considered ideal of ethnic self-awareness coexisting with human unity, or Fanon's emphasis on an ideal internationalism that also accommodates national identities and roles.

vt. 容纳；使适应

句子翻译

但是该剧关于黑人自尊可与人类团结相融合这一复杂观点"不矛盾"，杜博斯的理想或法侬的强调也"不矛盾"，前者提出著名的、深思熟虑的理想即民族自我意识可以与人类统一共存，后者强调兼容民族身份和角色的理想国际主义。

难句解析

1. 此句意思是 play's complex view 不矛盾，ideal 和 emphasis 也不矛盾。因为从表面上看，Black self-esteem 和 human solidarity 有一点矛盾，ethnic self-awareness 和 human unity 以及 ideal internationalism 和 national identities and roles 也有矛盾，但作者认为实际上它们都兼容。

2. 此句的翻译增加了"前者""后者"，目的是把较长的定语后置，如果按照普通前置的译法，句子将冗长难懂。

必杀句 100

难度系数 5.0

状语从句，从句部分主干是 offences were punished with the death penalty。

When in the eighteenth century offences against the law that today would not earn a month in

定语从句修饰 offences

prison were punished with the death penalty, the severity of the penal code had no serious effect

状语从句　形式主语

on the prevalence of crime. When it made no difference to the fate of a highwayman whether he

介词短语作状语　主语从句

had killed his victim or merely robbed him of a few pieces of silver, there were no more murders

副词作状语　状语从句

then than there were when men like Sir Francis Burdett succeeded in lightening the excessive

动词作宾语

severity of the penal laws.

句子翻译

在今天只判不到一个月有期徒刑的犯罪而在十八世纪会被判处死刑的当时，刑法典的严厉性对犯罪猖獗的威慑效果不显著。在拦路强盗不管是杀死受害者还是仅抢劫几枚银币都判同样刑的当时，没有太多谋杀，当像弗朗西斯伯德特爵士这样的人成功减轻了过于严重的量刑之后，谋杀也没有增多。

难句解析

此句是笔者见过的英语中关于比较结构的最难句。曾经有人翻译为："当拦路强盗不管是杀死受害者还是仅抢劫几枚银币对其命运没有任何区别时，那时的谋杀并不比弗朗西斯伯德特爵士这些人成功减轻了过于严重的量刑之后的谋杀少。"此种译法有望文生义之嫌，致使有读者怀疑原文是否印错了而应该写成 there were no less murders than there were。

其实该文作者水平很高，不仅想表达"减轻量刑后谋杀没有增多"，还想表达"前后其实谋杀都挺少"，如果写成 no less than 流于平庸，非名家手笔。就像春晚小品的台词"她比你还难看"，讽刺意味溢于言表，但如果直白地说成"你俩都挺难看的"则全无笑点。

鉴于没有更好的中文翻译对应该特殊表达，笔者采取的译法不求有功，但求无误。

第三节 百句精练

典型例句

S_1 El Salvador has earned the dubious distinction of having the worst soil erosion in continental America.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_2 Cleveland has won the dubious distinction of being the most miserable city in the United States, according to a new poll.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_3 Only two countries in the advanced world provide no guarantee for maternity leave and one of them, Australia, gave up the dubious distinction by establishing paid family leave starting in 2011.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_4 It is his dubious distinction to have proved what nobody would think of denying, that Romero at the age of sixty–four writes with all the characteristics of maturity.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_5 If the pores are large, the water in them will exist as drops too heavy for surface tension to hold, and it will drain away; but if the pores are small enough, the water in them will exist as thin films, too light to overcome the force of surface tension holding them in place; then the water will be firmly held.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_6 Even the “radical” critiques of this mainstream research model, such as the critique developed in *Divided Society*, attach the issue of ethnic assimilation too mechanically to factors of economic and social mobility and are thus unable to illuminate the cultural subordination of Puerto Ricans as a colonial minority.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_7 Chances are that she’s already heard the news.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_8 The chances are you haven’t fully decided what you want from your career at the moment, in which case you are definitely not ready to be a leader.

精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S_9 He passed the examination by virtue of hard work.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{10} He was elected chairman by virtue of his seniority.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{11} It is difficult to express it in terms of science.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{12} He referred to your work in terms of high praise.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{13} He thought of everything in terms of money.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{14} In term of money, he's quite rich, but not in term of happiness.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{15} In term of law, they are equally authentic.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{16} He was not so much angry as disappointed.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{17} His style of argument in the meeting is not so much aggressive as pertinacious.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{18} The great use of a school education is not so much to teach you things as to teach you the art of learning.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{19} Disputes between managers and owners are settled not so much by consultation as by litigation.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{20} She never so much as spoke.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S_{21} He did not so much as ask me to sit down.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{22}$ He did not so much as thank me.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{23}$ He went away without so much as saying goodbye.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{24}$ You should know better than to go swimmming on such a cold day.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{25}$ His grammar is no better than mine.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{26}$ He is no more diligent than you.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{27}$ The heart is no more intelligent than the stomach, for they are both controlled by the brain.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{28}$ He is no more a writer than a painter.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{29}$ I am no more a poet than he is a scholar.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{30}$ He is no less a writer than a painter.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{31}$ He is more good than bad.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{32}$ He is less good than bad.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{33}$ Pathological gambling involves persistent, recurring and uncontrollable pursuit less of money than of thrill of taking risks in quest of a windfall.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S$_{34}$ He is more than a father to her.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S35 The Web proved to be more than a fashion.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S36 She was more than kind to us.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S37 He was more than upset by the accident.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S38 This is more than I can understand.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S39 It is impossible to make more than the wildest guess at how many insects spiders kill, but they are hungry creatures, not content with only three meals a day.
精读遍数： ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑ ❑

S40 Love without trust is not love any more than a bird without wings is a bird.
精读遍数： ❑

S41 Science is built with facts just as a house is built with bricks, but a collection of facts cannot be called science any more than a pile of bricks can be called a house.
精读遍数： ❑

S42 Chaplin will not be remembered for espousing radical causes any more than Wayne will be remembered for endorsing conservative political candidates.
精读遍数： ❑

必杀句 93 ～ 100

S93 The achievements of the colonial artists, particularly those of Copley, West, and Peale, lent credence to the boast that the new nation was capable of encouraging genius and that political liberty was congenial to the development of taste — a necessary step before art could assume an important role in the new republic.
精读遍数： ❑

S94 But the recent discovery of detailed similarities in the skeletal structure of the flippers in all three groups undermines the attempt to explain away superficial resemblance as due to convergent evolution — the independent development of similarities between unrelated groups in response to similar environmental pressures.
精读遍数： ❑

S95 His primary task is not to think about the moral code which governs his activity, any more than a businessman is expected to dedicate his energies to an exploration of rules of product in business.

精读遍数： ❑

S96 For a number of years the selection of music for each film program rested entirely in the hands of the conductor or leader of the orchestra, and very often the principal qualification for holding such a position was not skill or taste so much as the ownership of a large personal library of musical pieces.

精读遍数： ❑

S97 These questions are political in the sense that the debate over them will inevitably be less an exploration of abstract matters in a spirit of disinterested inquiry than an academic power struggle in which the careers and professional fortunes of many women scholars — only now entering the academic profession in substantial numbers — will be at stake, and with them the chances for a distinctive contribution to humanistic understanding, a contribution that might be an important influence against sexism in our society.

精读遍数： ❑

S98 Nor, if regularity and conformity to a standard pattern are as desirable to the scientist as the writing of his papers would appear to reflect, is management to be blamed for discriminating against the “odd balls” among researchers in favor of more conventional thinkers who “work well with the team”.

精读遍数： ❑

S99 But the play’s complex view of Black self–esteem and human solidarity as compatible is no more “contradictory” than Du Bois’ famous, well–considered ideal of ethnic self–awareness coexisting with human unity, or Fanon’s emphasis on an ideal internationalism that also accommodates national identities and roles.

精读遍数： ❑

S100 When in the eighteenth century offences against the law that today would not earn a month in prison were punished with the death penalty, the severity of the penal code had no serious effect on the prevalence of crime. When it made no difference to the fate of a highwayman whether he had killed his victim or merely robbed him of a few pieces of silver, there were no more murders then than there were when men like Sir Francis Burdett succeeded in lightening the excessive severity of the penal laws.

精读遍数： ❑

第十章

练兵秣马——深度解析托福阅读

这是本书最后一章，如果之前必杀句遍数已经读满，距离真题模拟还差最后一步——按照本章的思路深度挖掘出题者目的。精读练习相当于“内功”，考题讲解相当于“招式”，没有内功空有招式毫无用处，而内功很强不需要招式也能克敌制胜，当然我们追求的是两者俱佳。

长难句学习成果验收

以下两段话综合所有六个难点，难度系数 5.0，可以用来检测学习成果，能否一气呵成读完。

验收学习成果

1

长名词结构 ☑ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☑ 长插入语 ☑ 特殊语序 ☑ 特殊表达 ☐

Earlier, we were infants and young children, and consequently more vulnerable; later, we shall
形容词作状语　　形容词作补语

undergo a progressive loss of our vigor and resistance which, though imperceptible at first, will
定语从句修饰 loss　　*adj.* 难以察觉的

finally become so steep that we can live no longer, however well we look after ourselves, and
状语从句　　状语从句，相当于 no matter how

however well society, and our doctors, look after us. This decline in vigor with the passing of time
状语从句，相当于 no matter how　　介词短语作定语修饰 decline

is called ageing. It is one of the most unpleasant discoveries which we all make that we must
形式主语　　定语从句修饰 discoveries　　主语从句

decline in this way, that if we escape wars, accidents and disease we shall eventually "die of old
并列的主语从句

age", and that this happens at a rate which differs little from person to person, so that there are
并列的主语从句　　定语从句修饰 rate　　连词

heavy odds in favor of our dying between the ages of sixty-five and eighty.

段落大意

之前我们是婴儿和小孩，因此比较脆弱；之后我们的精力和抵抗力日渐衰退，虽然起初难以察觉，但终将急转直下濒临死亡，不管我们对自己多么关心，也不管社会和医生多么周到地照顾我们。这种随着时间推移的精力衰退称之为老化。我们无一例外都会发现的最不愉快的事情有三：一是我们终将通过老化衰退，二是即使我们躲过了战争、意外事故和疾病，我们也终将“老死”，三是死亡发生与否并不因人而异，因此死于 65 岁至 80 岁之间的概率极大。

2

长名词结构 ☑ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☑ 长插入语 ☑ 特殊语序 ☑ 特殊表达 ☑

动词作状语。动词状语放在句中是为了强调主语，如果放在句首就是强调状语。

动词作定语修饰 that。provide 和 accord 近义，这里是用近义词避免重复。

The Victorians, realizing that the greatest happiness accorded to man is that provided by a

宾语从句　动词作定语修饰 happiness　代词指代 happiness

happy marriage, endeavored to pretend that all their marriages were happy. We, for our part,

动词作宾语　宾语从句

admitting the fact that no feat of intelligence and character is so exacting as that required of two

动词作状语　同位语从句解释 fact　代词指代 marriage

people who desire to live permanently together on a basis of amity, are obsessed by the problem

n. 和睦　*vt.* 使烦扰

of how to render the basic facts of cohabitation simpler and more reasonable, in order that

名词从句，how 在从句中作状语　并列的形容词作补语　状语从句

unhappy marriages may less frequently result. The Victorians would have considered it painful or

宾语从句　虚拟语气，言下之意是“实际上当时并没有这么认为”。代词指代 marriage

unpleasant were one to point out that only four marriages out of every ten are anything but forced

并列的形容词作补语　倒装的虚拟语气条件句，正常语序是 if one were to point out　预判后面有 but

servitudes. We ourselves start from this very assumption and try to build from it a theory of more

介词短语作状语提前

sensible relations between the sexes. Of all forms of arrant untruthfulness Victorian optimism

adj. 完全的，彻头彻尾的

appears to me to have been the most cowardly and the most damaging.

adj. 懦弱的，胆怯的

段落大意

维多利亚时代的人由于意识到人类最大的幸福是由快乐的婚姻所给予的，所以他们努力假装所有的婚姻都快乐。就我们而言，我们承认基于和睦的白头偕老的婚姻必须在智慧和性格方面下功夫，我们被困扰的问题是如何使两性同居的基本事实变得更简单、更合理，使得不幸的婚姻更少发生。如果当时有人指出每十个婚姻中只有四个不出于强制奴役，那么维多利亚时代的人必将认定婚姻是痛苦或令人讨厌的。我们自己正是从这一假设出发并力图根据该假设建立更明智的两性关系的理论。在所有完全虚伪的形式中，维多利亚时代的乐观在我看来最懦弱并且最有害。

做题时的“两个自我”

绝大部分考生做题的意识只是做对，而有经验的考生能化出“两个自我”，一个自我正常读题做题，另一个自我在不断思考“你不就是考我这个很长的定语从句有没有读懂吗，我读懂了，和原文句意一样的是 C，A 选项把原文定语故意写成状语，范围广了，不对；B 选项定语加入了一个很绝对的副词，改变了句意，不对；D 选项多加了取自另一句的定语混淆视听，乍一看和原文很像，但还是不对”。第二个自我能让考生胸有成竹地做对能力能达到的题目，如果准备充分意味着题目全对。即使没有把握也能在排除错误选项的情况下做对大部分题目而不是瞎猜，考完就知道大概成绩，对答案时心情不再像刮奖券一样起伏不定。

做题就是猜出题者怎么想

第二个自我就是下意识猜出题者怎么想。随着留学低龄化，托福考生非常年轻，普遍缺乏思考事物背后规律的能力。比如点菜时服务员推荐某个菜，我们要想有可能因为这个菜毛利高或者该菜原材料订多了才重点推荐；表面上全款买车财大气粗更有面子，流程也简便，为什么汽车销售反而希望我们贷款买车；商场按照什么原理安排商品楼层分布和布置电梯；超市按照什么原理布置货架；面试官的问题背后想获得什么信息；一个人的朋友圈展现了他什么样的性格。

这类问题思考得多做题时就能瞬间明白出题者的思路，尤其是阅读、听力等被动能力的考查。《第三章原则十：大道至简，做阅读考题的唯一方法是“定位”和“读懂”》曾提到句子插入题必须首先想要插入的句子前面有可能有什么、后面有可能有什么，只有具有这种联系的句子才出题，没有这种联系的不出题。这种分析就是猜出题者怎么想的典型应用。

第三章已讲解过词汇题、事实信息题、否定事实信息题和句子插入题四个题型，它们的共同点是根据段落某处细节即可做对，定位大于读懂。但更难的题是读懂大于定位，例如修辞目的题、指代题和句子简化题，尤其是将读懂发挥到极致的句子简化题。更多题型的详细讲解笔者未来会专门著书。

阅读例题一

长名词结构 ☑ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☑ 长插入语 ☐ 特殊语序 ☐ 特殊表达 ☐

Learning appropriate social behaviors is especially important and species that live in groups, like young monkeys that needed to learn to control selfishness and aggression and to understand the give-and-take involved in social groups.

学习合适的社交行为特别重要而且群居动物必须融入社交群体，例如需要学会控制私心和攻击心并理解付出和收获过程的猴子。

Which of the sentences below best expresses the essential information in the highlighted sentence in the passage? Incorrect choices change the meaning in important ways or leave out essential information.

句子简化题是对原文一个句子进行改写，从四个选项中选出和原文意思最接近的。按照猜测出题者思路的原则，我们要想为什么选取这个句子出题？规律是因为它包含六个难点中的一个或几个，出题

者硬生生地考查该处有没有读懂，选项和原文关键之处必须吻合。选此句考查是因为 monkeys 后的定语从句较长，针对此处很容易设置错误选项混淆视听。

正确选项：Monkeys and other social animals need to learn behaviors appropriate for their social groups.

错误选项一：Selfish and aggressive animals like monkeys live in groups in order to practice appropriate social behaviors. 错在猴子并非自私和富有攻击性，原文表达的是“需要学会控制私心和攻击心的猴子”。

错误选项二：Some monkeys are naturally too selfish and aggressive to understand the give-and-take of social groups, so they learn such important behaviors while young. 同样错在 monkeys are naturally too selfish and aggressive，为了误导读不懂的学生该句和原文单词非常近似。

阅读例题二

长名词结构 ☑ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☐ 长插入语 ☐ 特殊语序 ☐ 特殊表达 ☐

Alternative strategies have evolved in some plants, such as those that produce fewer but larger seeds that are dispersed to suitable sites by birds or small mammals or those that produce long-lived seeds. Many forest plants seem to exhibit the latter adaptation.

在一些植物中可供选择的策略已经产生，比如产生数量较少但是体积更大的通过鸟或小型哺乳动物带到合适栖息地的种子，或是产生存活得更久的种子。很多森林植物似乎偏向第二种适应方式。

The phrase “latter adaptation” in the passage refers to

A. producing fewer seeds

B. producing larger seeds

C. dispersal by birds and small mammals

D. producing long-lived seeds

指代题也考查读懂的能力，选取该句是因为两个 those 名词并列结构非常长，通过设置第二个 those 指代什么能看出考生有没有看出来并列。正确选项为 D。

阅读例题三

长名词结构 ☐ 长定语 ☐ 长状语 ☑ 长插入语 ☐ 特殊语序 ☐ 特殊表达 ☐

Glaciers move slowly across the land with tremendous energy, carving into even the hardest rock formations and thereby reshaping the landscape as they engulf, push, drag, and finally deposit rock debris in places far from its original location.

在巨大能量的作用下，冰川在陆地上缓慢移动，随着它们吞没、推动、拉拽，最后在离初始位置很远的地方沉淀岩石残余，冰川切碎甚至是最坚硬的岩石形态并因此重新塑造地貌。

Which of the sentences below best expresses the essential information in the highlighted sentence in the passage? Incorrect choices change the meaning in important ways or leave out essential information.

选取此句考查是因为长状语，详细讲解请参见第六章第三节《动词作状语如何破?》。错误选项专门针对 carving 和 reshaping 动词作状语以及 as 状语从句的理解：

错误选项：As a glacier moves, it leaves behind rock formations that have been engulfed, pushed, and dragged by the glacier 错在 engulf、push、drag 等动作的接受者应该是 rock debris 而不是 rock formations，错选是因为对状语结构不熟悉。

正确选项：Glaciers reshape the landscape by carving into rock and transporting the resulting debris to distant locations.

阅读例题四

长名词结构 ☐ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☑ 长插入语 ☐ 特殊语序 ☑ 特殊表达 ☐

Frequent fire is a factor to which rain forest species seem unable to adapt, although ancient charcoal remains from Amazon forest soils dating prior to the arrival of humans suggest that moist forests also occasionally burn.

虽然追溯到人类初至时亚马逊森林土壤中的古木炭残余表明潮湿的森林偶尔也会燃烧，但频繁的火灾仍旧是热带雨林物种无法适应的要素。

Which of the sentences below best expresses the essential information in the highlighted sentence in the passage? Incorrect choices change the meaning in important ways or leave out essential information.

选取此句考查是因为 although 引导很长的状语从句，而且状语后置。

正确选项：Rain forest species appear unable to adapt to frequent fires, but evidence from the past suggests that rain forests sometimes do burn.

阅读例题五

长名词结构 ☐ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☑ 长插入语 ☐ 特殊语序 ☐ 特殊表达 ☐

Pioneer species — those that occur only in the earliest stages of colonization — tend to have high rates of invasion because they produce very large numbers of reproductive propagules (seeds, spores, and so on) and because they have an efficient means of dispersal (normally, wind).

先驱物种——即只出现在植物殖民最初阶段的物种——能高效地入侵，因为它们可以产生大量的生殖繁殖体（种子、孢子之类），还因为它们有高效的传播方式（通常是风）。

Which of the sentences below best expresses the essential information in the highlighted sentence in the passage? Incorrect choices change the meaning in important ways or leave out essential information.

选取此句考查是因为并列的状语从句，正确选项将并列结构合二为一简化出来，包含原句所有重要信息。

正确选项：Pioneer species are successful invaders because they produce lots of seeds that are dispersed effectively.

剩下三个错误选项要么极大改写了原文含义，要么只是描述了原句不重要的某个细节：

The seeds of pioneer species are usually carried by the wind to fertile sites, where they reproduce very efficiently.

Pioneer species produce their largest numbers of propagules during the earliest stages of their colonization.

Pioneer species reproduce very quickly and efficiently because they produce very large number of seeds.

另外，不要担心阅读或听力中遇到 propagule 之类的学术名词，基本上文章都会马上用同位语或定语解释其含义，习惯了就成了预判。托福之类的考试设置之初就是消除学术背景知识对做题的影响。考生不要有学科偏见，认为懂相关知识更容易做对，以下这段话道理说得对：

Narrowly academic examinations and tests were felt, quite rightly, to be heavily weighted in favor of children who had had the advantage of highly–academic primary schools and academically biased homes. Tests such as TOEFL were devised to counteract this narrow specialization, by introducing problems which were not based on specifically scholastically–acquired knowledge.（狭隘的学院式考试和测验被认为对来自注重学术化的小学以及有学术偏向的家庭的孩子有利。托福之类的测试设计之初是要通过引入不只是基于特定学术知识的题目抵消这种狭隘的专业化。）

由此可见，托福高分不在于认识试题中所有词，而在于绕过生词的能力很强。

阅读例题六

长名词结构 ☐ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☑ 长插入语 ☑ 特殊语序 ☐ 特殊表达 ☐

Numerous seeming exceptions to this law have since been found, but they can usually be explained as cases in which the two species, even though competing for a major joint resource, did not really occupy exactly the same niche.

该法则无数表面上的例外被发现了，但这些例外通常可以被解释为这样的情况，在此情况下即使两个物种竞争同一个主要的共同资源，它们实际上并不是存在于完全一样的小生态系统中。

Which of the sentences below best expresses the essential information in the highlighted sentence in the passage? Incorrect choices change the meaning in important ways or leave out essential information.

正确选项：Apparent exceptions to this law usually involve cases in which two species compete for the same major resource but occupy slightly different niches.

选取此句考查是因为 but 并列句较长，前后都是主句，都是重要的信息，而且还包含定语从句和状语从句。选项用 slightly different 改写原文的 not exactly the same。

阅读例题七

长名词结构 ☐ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☐ 长插入语 ☐ 特殊语序 ☐ 特殊表达 ☐

Stephen Jay Gould and Niles Eldredge challenged conventional wisdom (gradualism) with an opposing viewpoint, the punctuated equilibrium hypothesis, which posits that species give rise to new species in relatively sudden bursts, without a lengthy transition period.

古生物学家史蒂芬·杰伊·古尔德和尼尔斯·埃尔德雷奇用相反的间断平衡论观点挑战了传统的渐变论，间断平衡论假设物种通过相对突然的爆发演变为新物种，并非通过较长的过渡时期。

Which of the sentences below best expresses the essential information in the highlighted sentence in the passage? Incorrect choices change the meaning in important ways or leave out essential information.

正确选项：The punctuated equilibrium hypothesis, in opposition to gradualism, holds that transitions from one species to another occur in comparatively sudden burst.

选取此句考查是因为较长的同位语。针对定语从句专门设置了错误选项：

The punctuated equilibrium hypothesis challenged gradualism, which holds that species evolved in relatively sudden bursts of brief duration.

错误之处是 which 引导定语从句一般修饰的是最近的名词，即 gradualism，选项变成了修饰 punctuated equilibrium。如果要避免歧义应该写成：The punctuated equilibrium hypothesis, which holds that species evolved in relatively sudden bursts of brief duration, challenged gradualism.

阅读例题八

长名词结构 ☐ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☐ 长插入语 ☐ 特殊语序 ☐ 特殊表达 ☐

For a given rate of invasion, colonization of a moist, fertile site is likely to be much more rapid than that of a dry, infertile site because of poor survival on the latter. A fertile, plowed field is rapidly invaded by a large variety of weeds, whereas a neighboring construction site from which the soil has been compacted or removed to expose a coarse, infertile parent material may remain virtually free of vegetation for many months or even years despite receiving the same input of seeds as the plowed field.

对于入侵速率，植物殖民到一个潮湿肥沃的场所会比到一个干燥贫瘠的场所更快，因为后者很差的存活条件。一片肥沃、翻耕的土地会迅速地被各种各样的杂草入侵，然而一个土壤被压实或被移除并暴露粗糙贫瘠的母质层的邻近建筑工地，尽管获得了与翻耕土地相同的种子，仍可能数月甚至数年寸草不生。

Why does the author mention a plowed field and a construction site in the passage?

A. To argue that sites that have been affected by human activity tend to be colonized slowly.

B. To illustrate the kind of sites that may be invaded by weeds.

C. To contrast sites in terms of their suitability for colonization.

D. To explain that exposing or compacting the soil results in successful colonization.

正确答案为 C。修辞目的题比例很高，做题关键在于“答案在例子之外”，也就是答案经常出现在该例子前后的几句话中。这一规律是因为解题过程是写作过程的逆向思维。写文章通常是先写一个道理，再用一个例子印证该道理，当被问及为什么作者用这个例子时就要用前面那句话来回答。考生很容易错选该例子本身所代表的含义，例如上题容易错选 A。

这一点用中文可能更好理解，请看一道中文修辞目的题：

电影《红磨坊》的剧本混杂了三个不同的戏剧故事。年轻作家爱上了一个生病的女孩源自亨利·穆杰的小说《波西米亚人》，关于妓女对爱情的觉醒来自《茶花女》，男主角试图将爱人从深渊带回正轨的桥段来自奥芬巴赫的轻歌剧《地狱中的奥尔菲》。

作者为什么提到《波西米亚人》《茶花女》《地狱中的奥尔菲》三部文学作品?

很明显正确答案是“为了展现《红磨坊》剧本设置的庞大构思”。错误选项可以设置为该例子本身表达的含义：“为了对比三部风格不同的作品”，“为了强调三部作品影响深远”，“为了体现《红磨坊》和这三部作品的不同”等等。

阅读例题九

长名词结构 ☐ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☑ 长插入语 ☐ 特殊语序 ☑ 特殊表达 ☐

Competition among the individuals of different species (interspecies competition) is a major concern of ecology. It is one of the factors controlling the size of competing populations, and extreme cases it may lead to the extinction of one of the competing species. This was described by Darwin for indigenous New Zealand species of animals and plants, which died out when competing species from Europe were introduced.

不同种族个体间的竞争（种族间竞争）是生态学关注的重点。它是控制竞争种群数量多少的要素之一，并且其极端情况会导致竞争种族中的一个灭绝。这一论点在达尔文对新西兰本土动植物的描述中被提到，这些动植物由于从欧洲引进竞争种族而灭绝。

In Paragraph 1, why does the author mention what happened in New Zealand?

A. To indicate that Darwin understood the importance of competition.

B. To illustrate that completion can lead to the extinction of species.

C. To identify where the idea of competition among species first arose.

D. To argue against the idea that the process of selection is a natural occurrence.

同上题一样是修辞目的题，正确答案是新西兰例子的前一句话，选 B。出题者一定会设置由例子本身引申出的选项迷惑考生，比如 C 选项。

阅读例题十

长名词结构 ☐ 长定语 ☑ 长状语 ☑ 长插入语 ☐ 特殊语序 ☐ 特殊表达 ☐

Built from stone and supported by pillars, stepwells also included pavilions that sheltered visitors from the relentless heat. But perhaps the most impressive features are the intricate decorative sculptures that embellish many stepwells, showing activities from fighting and dancing to everyday acts such as women combing their hair or churning butter.

由石头建造并由柱子支撑，印度阶梯井还拥有供来访者遮荫避热的凉亭。但是最令人印象深刻的特征可能就是装饰着很多阶梯井的复杂的装饰性的雕塑了，这些雕塑展现了打仗、舞蹈之类的大型活动以及女性梳头和制造奶油之类的日常活动。

Which part of some stepwells provided shade for people?

此题来源于雅思阅读，比托福简单。答案填 pavilion。选此句考查是因为第一句包含并列的动词作状语和 that 定语从句，出题者正要考查学生对该常见语法的理解。第二句也写得很好，主句部分是完全倒装，真正的主语是 sculptures，写成倒装是因为主语包含 that 定语从句。此句还包含 showing 动词作定语，即伴随状态。

提干稍稍改写原文，如果问 Which part of the stepwells sheltered visitor from heat? 就过于简单了。

段落精练

S_1 Earlier, we were infants and young children, and consequently more vulnerable; later, we shall undergo a progressive loss of our vigor and resistance which, though imperceptible at first, will finally become so steep that we can live no longer, however well we look after ourselves, and however well society, and our doctors, look after us. This decline in vigor with the passing of time is called ageing. It is one of the most unpleasant discoveries which we all make that we must decline in this way, that if we escape wars, accidents and disease we shall eventually "die of old age", and that this happens at a rate which differs little from person to person, so that there are heavy odds in favor of our dying between the ages of sixty–five and eighty.

精读遍数： ❑

S_2 The Victorians, realizing that the greatest happiness accorded to man is that provided by a happy marriage, endeavored to pretend that all their marriages were happy. We, for our part, admitting the fact that no feat of intelligence and character is so exacting as that required of two people who desire to live permanently together on a basis of amity, are obsessed by the problem of how to render the basic facts of cohabitation simpler and more reasonable, in order that unhappy marriages may less frequently result. The Victorians would have considered it painful or unpleasant were one to point out that only four marriages out of every ten are anything but forced servitudes. We ourselves start from this very assumption and try to build from it a theory of more sensible relations between the sexes. Of all forms of arrant untruthfulness Victorian optimism appears to me to have been the most cowardly and the most damaging.

精读遍数： ❑

跋——什么是好的教育

《托福阅读百句必杀》是我最近两年的研发成果，六个月中几易其稿，我不仅力求方法严谨没有漏洞，还要求必杀句中文翻译精准无误。这本书是我个人第四本书，也是我目前逻辑最严谨、修改次数最多的书，下一本《托福词汇连句记词》还要更进一步。我要感谢我的妻子甘慧琛老师，不管我遇到什么困难都一如既往地支持我，在我沮丧时鼓励我，我才能完成此书。

从之前偏重宣讲的大班教学过渡到重视提分的小班教学，我发现我的教学法明显更适合后者。该阅读提高法被无数学生认为是行之有效的学习法，最极端的例子是一位签约新东方前途的申请美国研究生的大四学生，之前考了四次阅读都在 10 分徘徊，在我的指导下精读完此材料，短短两个月后每次模考 TPO 都稳定在 25 分以上。此材料给学生带来的确实有效的进步，也是我将其出版的原因之一。

另外，用本书教学非常省力。六个格子花费两小时，十大原则花费一小时，然后学生自行阅读长名词结构讲解。老师只需要观察和答疑，从学生的问题判断他学会了多少，择其重点讲解篇章。必须要求学生先阅读再进行讲解，之后越学越快，后期不需要讲解所有句子，学生能自行看懂，越学越有自信，这就是提高。教学过程中我经常叮嘱学生，看懂必杀句不难，难的是坚持读满遍数，读恶心了还要继续读。英语不是老师讲会的，而是学生练会的。三五个学生在同一个班上学习，进度会不一样，老师引导整个课堂，看似没讲几句话，但是教学效果极好。最好的教学不是以时间论成败，而是以结果论成败。

本书讲解的提高方法很多，最重要的是三点——阅读时拆分句子，反复读熟句子和读更难的句子。不理解最后一点的学生最多。每个老师都有自己的价值观，我的价值观就是追求更高更强，不是学到某个标准就够了。所以我对学生期待很高，鼓励学生学更难的内容。我从来不怕基础不好的学生，因为我的方法绝对有效，基础再差也能在三到六个月内学好托福。想考的必备条件只有一个，就是求学欲望强烈，我无法教问题学生，即厌学、没有生活动力和目标、家庭关系极其紧张的学生，他们往往在国内混不下去被家长逼着出国。

近年来留学人数的上升可以归结为“用好的经济条件追求好的教育”。中国的经济发展造就了大批中产阶级，有了经济基础我们追求的好的教育必须包含以下三个标准：

教是为了不教

这是教育家叶圣陶先生提出的教学原理，意在指出教学的目的是让学生养成自学能力，最好的老师永远是自己。

中国教育偏向传授，长期形成的惯性思维是知识由老师讲会，讲多少学多少，讲多少记多少；课前学生不需做准备，等着老师上课讲；老师经常细致讲解课本里写得很清楚的内容；学生上课特别爱记笔记，因为记得好会被褒奖；最后的考试大部分由客观题组成，还会把各个不同科目的分数加在一起计算排名，就像买菜时白菜苹果一起称。西方教育完全相反，以启发为主，非常尊重学生得出属于自己的不同答案；

课前要求学生读大量材料，如果偷懒不预习上课会完全听不懂，因为老师既不会重复课前阅读的内容也不会讲解课本上已有的知识；一上课老师就会提问学生自己的想法，然后引导学生更深入的思考；学生课上的笔记没有具体的知识点，更多是灵光乍现的思想记录，供未来进一步形成观点或论文；最后的考试以课堂展示（presentation）和论文为主，这些形式比所谓客观的考试得分更能展现学生是否下功夫。

西方的教育以培养独立学习精神为最终目的，经过这样历练的学生会自我驱动，不需要被逼着学，再好的老师也比不过学生自己，陪伴学生一生的也只有学生自己。

培养独立个性

让孩子在较为陌生的环境中学习、生活能促进独立个性的养成。一些学生不独立和父母直接相关。比如咨询托福课程大部分都是家长带着孩子来咨询，家长的意见就是孩子的意见；上课后家长帮孩子四处找哪里上厕所、哪里有餐厅；孩子学习上有问题自己不开口问，都是家长来问老师。家长越是帮着孩子，孩子越长不大。

几年前我在美国亚利桑那大学访问，美国教授开车载我们一程，她开一辆七座全尺寸 SUV，我感叹道："What a big car!"，教授回答："I need a big car to accommodate my children."，接着她问："What about your children?"，言下之意是你们在中国是不是也需要一辆大车来装小孩？我刚想说："I am not married yet, so I don't have a child."，旁边一个同事却抢着说："We are the children."，美国教授明显一愣，我猜测她是在想："都快三十了怎么还说自己是 children？哪有这么大的 children？"中国孩子只要父母在总觉得自己是小孩，以不想长大为荣，中国大学生遇到三四岁小孩叫自己"叔叔阿姨"会很不悦，他们情愿一辈子做"哥哥姐姐"。而西方教育从小鼓励孩子尽早独立，十二岁的小孩都认为自己是个 grown-up。

独立的个性还会影响价值观、爱情观。一般男生会比女生独立，因为社会有"男子汉要努力拼搏"的压力。可是给女生的暗示都是反方面的，比如"学得好不如嫁得好"，导致很多女生以为靠姣好的长相和迷人的身材就能嫁个好老公，幸福一辈子。正确的版本应该是"学得好才能嫁得好"，因为学得好才能吸引同样优秀的男人，两个人都优秀才是门当户对，长久爱情的重要来源是两个人互相扶持、共同进步。网上还经常讨论一句话：你是我老公，你的钱不给我花给谁花？正确的说法应该是：你是我老婆，我的钱不给你花给谁花？这两者差别极大，女性越独立，欣赏她的男性越舍不得她辛苦工作，越会珍惜她；反而女性越是依赖男性，拿各种所谓的大道理逼着男性给自己钱花，两者地位会越来越不平等，肯定不长久。古人也说过"君子求诸己，小人求诸人"和"行有不得，反求诸己"。

同侪压力

大部分学生选校时会考虑校园环境、师资水平、教学住宿条件以及城市生活水平，而我只关注更为深入的唯一标准——优秀的同学。名校优势本质上都是吸引优秀学生的结果，我们努力的目的就是与这些比自己优秀的人为伍。好学生在哪，名校就在哪，不仅适用于学校，还适用于公司或团体。

好同学能激发我们的潜力，让我们不懒惰。只有在弱肉强食的学习环境中生存下来的人才能成为真的勇士，才能不害怕未来遇到的任何困难。好同学能培养团队协作精神，锻炼领导力。我们通过学习中的无数领导与被领导才知道自己最适合什么样的工作环境，最需要什么样的合作伙伴，这种学习体验通过做题绝对获得不了。好同学提供了学习标准，他们如果优秀，我只需和他们保持同步就够了。老师用自己的

经历激励不了学生，因为时代不同，但如果用同学的例子就很能说明问题，学生会心甘情愿地学习。

中国传统观念认为大学有大师，而现代的大学更重要的是学霸。申请名校不是找一个好老师教自己，因为走出校园的职业生涯更没人来教了，同学身上的闪光点只能靠自己发现并学习。

留学潮只会因为国内教育跻身世界前列而衰退，在这一天到来之前，我们必须学习西方教育的先进之处。希望读者通过本书阅读能力提高的同时关注好的教育这三个标准，不走弯路，学以致用。

2016 年 6 月 6 日

读者感言：

卢老师的语法简单实用，而阅读原则和长难句方法打通了我的阅读瓶颈。我建议各位同学，可以总体上粗读一遍。然后再按照卢老师的要求细读下去，肯定收获更多。

——厦门大学大三学生姚向前

卢老师对英语句型的分析非常透彻，真正读懂句子对英语学习是很重要的，掌握本书内容后再去读托福真题真的轻松了很多。

——新疆克拉玛依高一学生罗梵月

卢老师选取的句子难度很大，一开始学习时每个句子需要五分钟才能很好地拆分并理解。坚持按照卢老师的方法学到最后会发现能很快感觉出句子结构，即使有很多单词不认识，也可以基本理解句子大致意思，让我受益匪浅。

——西安电子科技大学大三学生刘清馨

在学习过程中最让我惊讶的是仅仅一个小时我就梳理并掌握了学校语法老师两个学期都讲不完的全部语法知识。同时在学句子过程中积累了词汇量，并且学会了长难句的拆解。

——北京二中高二学生王梓伊

为中华崛起传播智慧

地址：北京市百万庄大街22号
邮政编码：100037

电话服务
服务咨询热线：010-88361066
读者购书热线：010-68326294
010-88379203

网络服务
机工官网：www.cmpbook.com
机工官博：weibo.com/cmp1952
金书网：www.golden-book.com
教育服务网：www.cmpedu.com
封面无防伪标均为盗版

策划编辑◎张琳 / 封面设计◎

QQ1789440944
18611736436

“兵马未动，粮草先行；词汇未背，方法先行。卢根老师是新东方词汇教学‘语境派’的代表，非常注重语境、语感、例句教学，见解独到，独树一帜。”

“卢根非常看重例句教学，在《连句记词》系列书籍中，他精心选取了两三百个例句首尾相连串起所有大纲词汇，这次他又继续用例句教学思路帮助广大托福考生突破阅读。”

——俞敏洪

本书特色

- **甩掉语法包袱：**用六个格子打破读长难句必须学复杂语法的魔咒
- **精选真题真句：**典型例句常考、常用，必杀句必会、必学、必读
- **树状句子分析：**拆分式解析直观易懂，养成读句好习惯考试无敌
- **翻译精准实用：**句子翻译以考场上最适合考生快速反应的方式呈现
- **难句难词难点：**难句解析化难句，标注释义解难词，背景介绍消难点
- **定量学轻松会：**按照15天规划，完成要求的精读遍数让阅读变简单

机械工业出版社微信公众号

扫码输书名　即刻听录音

上架指导　托福阅读 / 长难句

ISBN 978-7-111-54677-1

定价：39.80元